



WIRRED

and more...
www.wirred.com

HELLO, WORLD

Wired.2021.04.02

[Fri, 02 Apr 2021]

[Magazine Articles](#)

Magazine Articles

[Six-Word Sci-Fi: Stories Written By You](#)April 1, 2021

[Portraits of a Neighborhood's 'Wood Wide Web'](#)April 1, 2021

[Bed Tricks, Cod, and the Hidden History of Catfishing](#)March 30, 2021

[So You Want to Prepare for Doomsday](#)March 12, 2021

[Good-Bye Zoom. Hello Low-Key Ambient Snooping](#)March 10, 2021

[Sci-Fi Writer or Prophet? The Hyperreal Life of Chen Qiufan](#)March 9, 2021

[Why Can't I Stop Staring at My Own Face on Zoom?](#)March 4, 2021

[Adoption Moved to Facebook and a War Began](#)March 4, 2021

[While Jack Dorsey Mans the Monastery](#)March 2, 2021

[2034, Part VI: Crossing the Red Line](#)March 2, 2021

[What Did I Just Read? A Conversation With the Authors of 2034](#)March 2, 2021

[How to Remember a Disaster Without Being Shattered by It](#)February 23, 2021

[2034, Part V: Sailing Into Darkness](#)February 23, 2021

[2034, Part IV: The Spratly Islands Ambush](#)February 16, 2021

[2034, Part III: One Left to Tell the Tale](#)February 9, 2021

The Secret, Essential Geography of the OfficeFebruary 8, 2021

There Are Spying Eyes Everywhere—and Now They Share a BrainFebruary 4, 2021

The Sims Made Me Realize I'm Ready for More In LifeFebruary 4, 2021

The No-Good Very Nasty Remastering of The Lord of the RingsFebruary 2, 2021

2034, Part II: Blackout in Washington, DCFebruary 2, 2021

[WIRED Readers](#)

[Culture](#)

04.01.2021 03:30 PM

Six-Word Sci-Fi: Stories Written By You

Here's this month's prompt, how to submit, and an illustrated archive of past favorites.



Illustration: Elena Lacey

THIS MONTH'S PROMPT

In six words, write a story about a freaky new discovery in physics.

Submit stories on [Twitter](#), [Facebook](#), or [Instagram](#), or email us at mail@wired.com. We'll choose one to illustrate.

Disclaimer: All #WiredSixWord submissions become the property of WIRED. Submissions will not be acknowledged or returned. Submissions and any other materials, including your name or social media handle, may be published, illustrated, edited, or otherwise used in any medium. Submissions must be original and not violate the rights of any other person or entity.

APRIL 2021

A Review of a Future Work of Art

ILLUSTRATION: VIOLET REED

IT TICKLED ALL OF MY SENSES.

—Jacky Reif, via Facebook

Honorable Mentions:

So that's an AI self portrait? —Jason Cohen, via Facebook

I prefer Boston Dynamics' earlier work. —@sscarsdale, via Twitter

Uninspired. Lacking originality. Try again, Earth. —Amanda Bull Chafin, via email

NFT or not, it is great. —Peter Boersma, via Facebook

Not as good as Banksy's virus. —Simon O Wright, via Facebook

Brave to show an unfiltered canvas. —@Alcestronaut, via Twitter

Not what teleportation was invented for. —@Arturo_thrdez, via Twitter

Shame mortals will not appreciate it. —@asylbek0205, via Instagram

Reminds me of the Before Times. —Jacqueline Jaeger Houtman, via Facebook

MARCH 2021

A Story About a Tech-Centric Religion

ILLUSTRATION: VIOLET REED

IN THE BEGINNING WAS THE “WWW” ...

—Eduardo Bolívar, via Facebook

Honorable Mentions:

I swiped right and found salvation. —Conrad Dean, via Facebook

Praying to AI got better results. —@jgmclean0, via Twitter

The prophet revealed the source code. —@the4lw, via Instagram

Atop the hill, sayeth he, “reception”? —@dghutt, via Twitter

The app works in mysterious ways. —Tyler Hughs, via Facebook

Move fast. Break things. Repent. Repeat. —@iampinch, via Twitter

Always back up to be saved. —Tadeusz Walter Misztela, via Facebook

Chip implanted, the new priest rose. —@wlmooseley, via Twitter

“Worship the Apple.” —iBook of Jobs —ThoreauRug, via email

FEBRUARY 2021

A Story About a WFH Office Scandal

ILLUSTRATION: VIOLET REED

THEY WERE IN THE SAME ROOM.

—@abhignak, via Instagram

Honorable Mentions:

He was never a real person? —Ian Schoen, via Facebook

Wife realized my job is easy. —@jchavizzle, via Twitter

Dress code updated after yesterday's "incident."

@mistermistermistertibbs, via Instagram

He certainly shouldn't have stood up. —Małgorzata Kuś, via Facebook

"Joe's the father." "You're not muted." —Austin Craver, via email

Worker's comp? It is her dog! @thefitzroymclean, via Instagram

It looks real, but it's not. —Jonathan Goode, via Facebook

The window behind her reflected images. —@chmslady, via Twitter

As everyone's computer froze, she laughed. —@mcgroup53, via Twitter

JANUARY 2021

A Story About a Future American President

ILLUSTRATION: VIOLET REED

This article was downloaded by **calibre** from <https://www.wired.com/story/six-word-sci-fi/>

| [Section menu](#) | [Main menu](#) |

[Zak Jason](#)

[Ideas](#)

04.01.2021 07:00 AM

Portraits of a Neighborhood's 'Wood Wide Web'

During quarantine, photographer Andres Gonzalez wandered his city and captured lone redwoods, trapped by human sprawl but linked by nature's networks.

Sometimes, mature douglas firs send sugar to saplings via miles of underground, gossamer-thin mycorrhizal fungi. Through these same passageways (the "Wood Wide Web") birches can loan carbon to fir trees in the summer, while firs pay it back in fall. And trees of different species might share nitrogen leached out of salmon carcasses left over from a bear's lunch.

This article was downloaded by **calibre** from <https://www.wired.com/story/photos-andres-gonzalez-redwood-trees/>

[Virginia Heffernan](#)

[Ideas](#)

03.30.2021 08:00 AM

Bed Tricks, Cod, and the Hidden History of Catfishing

Intriguing, maddening deception can shake up our existence and sometimes—*sometimes*—set us free.


 illustration showing evolution of man but with a statue covering the half of the man's body

Illustration: Sam Whitney

“Quite early in life George Tracy discovered that if he were to be reasonably happy and prosperous he must pretend.” So begins a mesmerizing psychological novel by Charles Marriott, published in 1913. The tale of George's lifelong obsession with an elusive frenemy named Mary, who has “the key to the side door of his nature,” has long been out of print. It's remembered chiefly for its title: [The Catfish](#).

Yes, this century-old book gives us the figure of the modern-day catfish, the shrewd machinator who breaks hearts and passwords with nothing but [Wi-Fi](#), cunning, and yottabytes of imagination. This conceit was reprised in the [2010 documentary](#) by Ariel Schulman and Henry Joost, *Catfish*, which tells the story of a Michigan artist, Angela Wesselman, who used fake [Facebook](#) profiles and other online trickery to deceive Schulman's brother, Nev.

If you're confused, you're where you should be. The numberless catfish who now course through [social media](#), the ones who devastate lives with sophisticated online masquerades, exist to beguile and disturb. Catfish like the fictional Mary or the real-life Angela are foxy and artistic. Others are in

it for money or the lulz. But in all catfishing cases, the happiness of the catfish requires your disequilibrium—and your obsession with them.

The contemporary 2021 catfish leverages everything from Hinge to Photoshop to [WhatsApp](#). But the catfish dynamic long predates the internet, and even Marriott's novel. In the 1660s, the dauntless Mary Carleton concocted letters and official certificates to steal hearts and monies from rich chumps, using a deck of beguiling identities, from a principled virgin heiress to an orphaned German princess.

Around 1700, George Psalmanazar, a fraudster, probably French but posing as a Taiwanese adventurer, published a book describing his pretend homeland as a polygamous bacchanalia where men, naked except for gold and silver genital plates, sacrificed children and ate their wives. The dubious shtick won him admirers for his heroic escape from paganism to Christianity. One of his admirers paid his living expenses.

Shakespeare's characters, of course, can catfish as dexterously as any [Finsta](#) phantom, and they gender-bend and trans-humanize their way through exquisite courtship chicanery. A “bed trick,” a favorite device of Shakespeare, happens when one person subs for another in the *midst of a sexual act*. Take that, ye online catfish pickers.

I recently spoke by phone to Nev Schulman, the original catfish victim who is now famous as the host of MTV's reality show *Catfish*. He called my attention to *A Midsummer Night's Dream* as an ace catfishing precedent. Otherwise, he said, he isn't big on literary allusions, and formal education doesn't suit him. (Indeed, he was kicked out of college for beating up a woman whom he says he took for a man.) But his grandmother, Marlene Strauss, is a distinguished art historian. In 2016 she appeared on a Manhattan stage with Nev, for an intergenerational discussion of love and lies. While Strauss infused the evening with erudition, citing proto-catfishing in works from *Cyrano de Bergerac* to *Some Like It Hot*, Schulman talked about latter-day digital catfishing, a darker affair, which too often ends “in courtrooms and restraining orders.”

Though he did cite Genesis. “Jacob had to stand before his father—though his eyesight was failing—and physically pretend to be someone else,”

Schulman said. “Of course, now we've removed the human element.” With human bodies out of the way, catfishing can finally happen at scale.

In Marriott's novel, the catfish Mary is less a liar than an agitator. She meets George in childhood and nips at the edges of his life into late middle age; she gets him to question everything; he can't tell if he loves or despises her. She also goads him to a more engaged and ecstatic existence. In this way, she is akin to Nev's catfish, Angela, who turned him from a defeated dropout to a man with a purpose.

Angela introduced Nev online to an 8-year-old prodigy painter, a 19-year-old seductress, and a whole cast of supporting characters composed of MP3 fragments, online video, photographs, text messages, and nearly a dozen Facebook profiles. Schulman at 24 had his worldview blown open when he fell hard for the seductress, who in pictures looked like Jennifer Lawrence. Only when he and his brother's film crew, suspecting something was up, drove to Michigan's Upper Peninsula to door-stop Angela did the scales truly fall. Angela, who does not look like Jennifer Lawrence, was playing all the characters. Nev was first annoyed, then impressed, then grateful. He told me that Angela is still the greatest catfish he has ever encountered.

Ultimately, Marriott uses “catfish” to describe “anything or anybody that introduced into life ... the queer, unpleasant, disturbing touch of the Kingdom of Heaven.” Angela's husband, Vince, who likely came to the catfish allegory by way of the popular Christian writer Joel Osteen, puts his own spin on it. “They used to tank cod from Alaska all the way to China,” he says, mixing up the geography. “By the time the codfish reached China, the flesh was mush and tasteless. So this guy came up with the idea that if you put these cods in these big vats, put some catfish in with them and the catfish will keep the cod agile. And there are those people who are catfish in life. They keep you on your toes. They keep you guessing, they keep you thinking, they keep you fresh.”

Thus is the catfish brought full circle. The person of Angela recalls the fictional Mary: Each is an intriguing and maddening woman who shakes up the existence of another.

Not long ago, Schulman's MTV show became a podcast. Schulman and a cohost help a range of young lonelyhearts, who fear they've fallen for digital specters, determine fact from fiction. Over and over the show features catfish victims who have been daydreaming into their phones, shoring up fragmentary missives from outer space to create alternate lives.

“Privacy has become so unbelievably rare,” Schulman told me. “There's been a pendulum swing. Young people are desperately looking for something private in their life—just for them.” The people who appear on *Catfish* don't want to be relieved, right away, of their illusions of intimacy; they want to live in the fantasia a while, juice it for self-knowledge. But by the time they contact Schulman, it's because, as he told me, “something isn't quite right. It's grown and grown as a pit in their stomach.”

The love objects are almost always a mirage. The catfish almost never look like their profile pics. Sometimes they're of another gender or race. Generally they're less successful, less rich, more lost, more incarcerated.

Schulman on the podcast shows something like admiration for anyone sweetly naive enough to end up in the catfished seat, *his* seat. At the same time, he's surprised that many guests don't know he was once nabbed. They never saw his movie. “People in this situation are people who don't do their research,” he told me. Right on.

Catfish makes obvious what most adults know: Romantic love is shot through with projection. Our phones mirror back to us our fondest hopes, and into the text bubble we pour all our yearnings. “I can't wait to fill my fingers with your hair,” Schulman once texted his catfish. “My body is craving your touch tonight,” wrote Angela. It's cringe-hyperworthy now. But it's what infatuation sounds like. You're always writing to a half-imagined other. Every sexter is a poet.

But *Catfish* never fails to end in disappointment. “Inevitably, the second they see them they have an instantaneous drain of affection,” Schulman said.

Back to *The Catfish*, 1913. Though George and Mary are both married to other people by the end of the book, George discovers in a flash that he and

Mary have something “beyond love,” as only his catfish can keep him honest. “Before he could be straight with himself he had to have it out with her—and all his life he had shirked it.” The catfish is not the pretender. Quite the contrary, she's the spur to drop all pretense. In talking to Mary, George is finally talking to himself, the self he's been suppressing. He's liberated. Some of the participants on MTV's *Catfish* find the same thing: that once they have it out with their catfish, they are, in Marriott's words, “free to love elsewhere.”

In profound gratitude, George turns back to his beloved wife with renewed passion. The provocations of the catfish have been enlightening, but real love is serene. And sometimes all you want is a person who, in not looking like their ravishing selfie, looks better.

If you buy something using links in our stories, we may earn a commission. This helps support our journalism. [Learn more.](#)

This article appears in the April issue. [Subscribe now.](#)

This article was downloaded by **calibre** from <https://www.wired.com/story/bed-tricks-cod-hidden-history-of-catfishing/>

[Paul Ford](#)

[Ideas](#)

03.12.2021 07:00 AM

So You Want to Prepare for Doomsday

There's no cool gear with my method, but it has other advantages.

 rucksack with survival contents displayed

ILLUSTRATION: ELENA LACEY, GETTY IMAGES

The preppers have the best stuff. It's because they operate under such constraints: You have to pack your whole society—money, tinctures, food powders—in a lone bag. Then, when the big bug-out comes, you slip on your paracord bracelets and shemagh scarf and vanish into the woods, to an already-scouted redoubt obscured by trees. There, beside your tent, you gnaw jerky and sip bleached snowmelt out of 5-gallon bags, wrapped in a 26-micron bivy that reflects 90 percent of body heat. A society of one.

By day you carefully inventory the dozens of curated objects in your bag, rifling through sub-pockets, enumerating ibuprofen, contemplating seed packets, calculating caloric yields. *Portable hand-cranked flashlight. Clove oil for toothache.* At night, with darkness yielding to bright gray inside your night-vision goggles, you patrol, hand hovering near your CZ-75 P-01. Far off down the mountain you hear the cracks, groans, whistles, and shots of a splintering society. A week ago you administered an Oracle database. Now your job is to survive.

And you dream: One day, after the smoke of civilization has drifted away, you'll link up with others exactly like you. A new world will rise out of your duffel bag. You'll hang up solar-powered mesh networks from trees

and make your own internet. You'll transact for potatoes and penicillin on the blockchain under the watch of vigilant owls. But now, jerky.

What the [preppers](#) do is fully acknowledge their fears and turn them into a particular aesthetic. Like goths. They make their anxieties perfectly legible. I get it. I read *My Side of the Mountain* when I was a kid. But while prepper gear is awesome, I keep thinking: *We should be trying to avoid a civil war, not packing for one.*

The Aesthetics Wiki has hundreds of different entries—Preppy and Punk, of course, but also more modern aesthetics like Dark Academia (Eurocentricity, Whit Stillman, sweaters), Vaporwave (synths, VHS boxes, teal), or [Cottagecore](#) (shortalls, Hozier). Many of the aesthetics have left- and right-wing offshoots: Vaporwave has produced Laborwave and Fashwave; Tradwifery (patriarchy, heteronormativity, childbirth) can be understood as reactionary Cottagecoreism.

I would have told you I don't have an aesthetic. But a few months ago my family moved to an old house, not far from our old apartment. This house has a yard and asbestos and a plaque on the front that says: 1913. Multiple generations of telephone wiring run along and inside the walls, and jacks abound: Bell System four-pin 404A jacks and modular 6P4C jacks, too, all useless in 2021. I like them. They suggest critical infrastructure come and gone. The people who lived in the house before us sent a kind, slightly melancholy note, wishing us the best, but we never met them. Pandemic transaction.

When we moved in, we immediately started to plan for an apocalypse. (My spouse's elementary school overlooked [Donner Lake](#) in California, so worst-case scenarios come easily to her; she has a disaster-preparedness Pinterest board.) I figured out where we could put the tilapia tanks and pondered a new fence. We could store barrels of powdered food in the basement. Following decades of living within the collective fortress of an apartment building, a house—just sitting there by the street—feels extremely vulnerable. After a few days, a nice older neighbor dropped off a box of candy. Hardly the Purge.

Oddly, we keep not buying furniture. We did find a dining room table, cut out of a lane in a decommissioned bowling alley, with little inlaid arrows to guide your throw. Cheap and heavy. We bought some chairs, eBayed out of a university library in Georgia. Each chair carries the shadow of thousands of college butts. We like things that remind us of people gathering, playing, or working. Not shabby-chic, but institutional-heavy. Things that have been rubbed down to a shine.

My kids are doing ballet and tae kwon do on Zoom, I am sending Slack messages in a half-empty house, and my spouse is in the kitchen calling strangers to offer them help navigating the state vaccination website. This is the pandemic aesthetic: Everything is connected, but you can't connect. I lull myself to sleep listening to FDR speeches. In one, he spoke sadly of a Boy Scout jamboree canceled for an outbreak of polio. This is my aesthetic. In this way I achieve safety and control. It's a little silly, really, but I'm Infracore.

My therapist (cognitive-behavioral, Thursday 2 pm, takes Venmo) tells me that one becomes angry when expectations aren't met. Thus, to remain calm, you have to adjust your expectations. The kicker: Behaviors tend to stay the same over time, so don't expect other people to change. Your only real choice, the only thing you can control, is whether to calm down—or not.

This advice has made me think differently about social media. Perhaps social media is not, as people say, a machine for the transmission of viral outrage, but rather an aggregator of shared expectations. In fact, people online are constantly talking about what they expect. They expect political victories, total respect for Taylor Swift, resolution of HR issues, financial aid, and apologies—and they expect it all right now. People online say, *We will never adjust our expectations, so you must adjust your behavior.* Twitter is the exact opposite of therapy.

Personally, I expect the apocalypse will come slowly, with episodic spikes (pandemics, terrorism, superstorms, buildings collapsing in space or value). There's no shortage of warnings, feature articles about human climate migration and wet-bulb temperatures, or op-eds asking us to stop buying fridges.

At least for now the infrastructure we have keeps finding ways to route around the crises. When a train tunnel floods, you run a bus. You dump sand on a damaged beach, and one might always use public funds to construct a fine berm. And when that berm is submerged you can build a bigger berm. We are expecting that we can find solutions, ways to preserve the order of things. Just a little science and some elbow grease, maybe a colony on Mars, and society can be good as new.

What else are we going to do? The therapeutic suggestion is: Broaden your expectations, so that when bad things happen you are ready. For some, this means being ready to grab your stuff, slipping into warm, gray clothes, and vanishing from civilization. For me, the only thing that calms fear is the idea that we'll keep helping until we need help. Doctors at the hospital, National Guard members at the vaccine center, neighbors dropping by with food. Lest you think me too much a fool, we do have a go bag. We just keep raiding it for cash and ibuprofen. And every morning I wake up and prep, by thinking: Expect everything to change but people.

This article was downloaded by **calibre** from <https://www.wired.com/story/prepare-for-doomsday/>

| [Section menu](#) | [Main menu](#) |

[Clive Thompson](#)

[Ideas](#)

03.10.2021 07:00 AM

Good-Bye Zoom. Hello Low-Key Ambient Snooping

If you are missing out on serendipity in your remote work, try ramping up your 2D audio copresence.

 Two coworkers communicated through a series of screens.

ILLUSTRATION: KATTY HUERTAS

One year into our all-remote existence, executives at white-collar companies are realizing two things. One is that they're pleased (stunned, even) by how productive employees have been. They'd worried that "work from home" would turn into "Netflix and chill." Instead, their people are killing it: Deliverables are being delivered, milestones milestone.

But companies have run into a serious problem. They have lost serendipity. Sure, colleagues are connecting on video chat. But it's all very planned and formal; there are no *how's-it-going* encounters at the coffee station. This is a shame, because those chance run-ins help cement a sense of togetherness, and they can engender new ideas too—like when the VP of HR eats lunch next to a salesperson and casually mentions a new market that winds up being worth millions.

So now people are wondering: Could software replicate some of that office magic?

Various startups are giving it a shot. One is Teamflow, a browser-based app that lets you set up a virtual office that you view from above, in 2D, sort of like a cartoony Ikea floor plan. You can set up different rooms and fill them

with furniture icons (or even weird memey images, if you want a MySpace vibe). When employees log in, their faces appear in tiny round video streams. You drag your icon around the virtual office to hang out “near” others, and voice-talk to them too; the closer your icon is to a colleague, the louder they sound. Move farther away for peace and quiet.

It sounds kooky. Frankly, it *looks* kooky. But early users tell me it replicates many of the dynamics of in-person hanging out. “This really streamlined my life,” says Rafael Sanches, the cofounder of Anycart, a food-shopping service. We met recently inside his company’s Teamflow space. The little video icons for Sanches and me were perched at his virtual desk; three engineers were clustered together, chatting, in the corner of the office. Sanches dragged his icon over to say hello to them, then zipped back over to me.

“I do this all the time,” he says. He’ll plant himself near groups of employees, where they’ll work together, sometimes in silence, other times chitchatting. Sanches will also frequently invite an employee to wander off to a corner to talk one on one. He likes the fact that other employees can see that he’s meeting with someone individually; it replicates some of the quasi-public nature of conversation in a real office. “Socially, the engineers know I’m still there, like I’m *around*,” he notes. He’s not vanishing into private Zoom calls with people.

The whole thing felt oddly gamelike. That makes sense, because video games pioneered the art of letting far-flung people hang out online. Some workers have even playfully used games as meeting places during the pandemic. When the author and artist Viviane Schwarz was working on a project last year, she met her team inside *Red Dead Redemption 2*, a cowboy fighting game. They’d sit around a virtual campfire and talk shop (while also watching out for danger: “Was that gunshots?”). Some new copresence apps, like Bonfire and Remotely, riff explicitly off game aesthetics and let you hang out with workmates as avatars in a 3D environment.

One thing you can see, in all these remote experiments, is that audio beats video. Zoom-staring into a webcam is wearying. So most of these apps actively downplay full-screen video, and users seem to like that. Pragli,

another virtual-meeting startup, gives users a choice to connect with audio or video, and its cofounder, Doug Safreno, estimates that people use the audio-only method twice as often as video. Consider this the revenge of the old-school telephone call: Turns out we just want to talk.

And, more subtly, to listen. Many of these apps allow for a bit of the ambient eavesdropping that happens in an office, where you can look across the room and see that two colleagues are talking—maybe even get a sense what they’re discussing—without fully tuning in. This semiprivate, semipublic nature of office chat helps give a team a proprioceptive sense of itself, one that’s too often missing in our remote world of one-on-one calls.

An office has power dynamics, for good and for ill; part of how we navigate a job involves keeping tabs on how others interact. Is your manager talking to the boss a lot? Maybe it means your team is in trouble? Or that you’re *impressing* the head honcho? We gather intelligence, chew it over with colleagues, become more connected.

One benefit of the physical office, in other words, is that it lets us low-key *creep* on each other. It turns out we might want some of that even in our software.

This article was downloaded by **calibre** from <https://www.wired.com/story/good-bye-zoom-hello-low-key-ambient-snooping/>


[Yi-Ling Liu](#)

[Backchannel](#)

03.09.2021 07:00 AM

Sci-Fi Writer or Prophet? The Hyperreal Life of Chen Qiufan

As China's science fiction authors are elevated to the status of oracles, Qiufan's career—and his genre's place in society—have gone through the looking glass.

 Chen Qiufan

Chen Qiufan wants his writing to provoke a sense of both wonder and estrangement, like a “fun-house mirror, reflecting real light in a way that is more dazzling to the eyes.” Photograph: Yilan Deng

When Chen Qiufan took a trip to the southwest Chinese province of Yunnan 15 years ago, he noticed that time seemed to slow down as he reached the city of Lijiang. Chen was a recent college graduate with a soul-sucking real estate job in the pressure-cooker metropolis of Shenzhen, and Lijiang was a backpacker's refuge. Wandering through the small city, he was enchanted by the serrated rows of snow-capped mountains on the horizon and the schools of fish swimming through meandering canals. But he was also unnerved by the throngs of city dwellers like himself—burned out, spiritually lost, adrift. He wove his observations together into a short story called “[The Fish of Lijiang](#),” about a depressed office worker who travels to a vacation town, only to discover that everything is artificially engineered—from the blue sky to the fish in the streams to the experience of time itself.

Chen has since gone on to pen many more stories, win virtually every sci-fi literary award in China, and establish himself as a leading voice among the country's growing roster of acclaimed writers in the genre. But unlike Liu

Cixin, the lionized author of [*The Three Body Problem*](#), who grapples with the faraway grandeur of outer space, Chen is drawn more to the interior lives of characters struggling to anchor themselves in a moment of accelerated change—much the way nearly anyone in China struggles to anchor themselves today. His work is often described as “science fiction realism.”

At the beginning of his writing process, Chen says, he often tries to act like “an anthropologist conducting fieldwork.” Before writing his debut novel, [*The Waste Tide*](#), a 2013 eco-thriller about a workers’ uprising in a futuristic dump called Silicon Isle, Chen spent time in the southeastern city of Guiyu, one of the world’s largest dumping grounds for electronic waste, observing migrant workers toil in the toxin-laden trash. Once he has a feel for a given landscape in the real world, he transports the scene into what he calls the imagined “hyperreal”—a zone where the fantastical and factual are so blurred it is unclear where one begins and one ends. (In the novel, one of his main characters transforms into a cyborg, having become subsumed into the world of waste.) He wants his writing to provoke a sense of both wonder and estrangement, like a “fun-house mirror, reflecting real light in a way that is more dazzling to the eyes.”

But in the past few years—a period that has seen China’s sci-fi authors elevated to the status of New Age prophets—Chen’s own career has become an object in the fun-house mirror. After *The Waste Tide* garnered widespread attention at home and abroad, reviewers began praising Chen as the “William Gibson of China,” and the tech industry has embraced him as a kind of oracle. An institute run by [AI](#) expert and venture capitalist [Kai-Fu Lee](#)’s company has even developed an algorithm capable of writing fiction in the author’s voice. (Chen’s recent short story “The State of Trance,” which includes passages generated by the AI, nabbed first prize in a Shanghai literary competition moderated by an artificially intelligent judge, beating an entry written by Nobel Prize in Literature winner Mo Yan.) In China, it is the place of science fiction itself—and the status of writers like Chen—that have taken a turn toward the hyperreal.

Born in the ’80s, in the wake of China’s opening up and reform movement, Chen grew up during a moment of exhilarating upheaval: The market

economy was introduced, state control over culture loosened, and Western ideas flowed freely into the country—from McDonald's to rock 'n' roll to Star Wars. He lived in the city of Shantou, in the culturally diverse, coastal region of Chaoshan, Guangdong, close to the Hong Kong border, with easy access to foreign entertainment. As a teen, he would devour golden-age sci-fi classics by Arthur C. Clarke and Isaac Asimov that his father, an engineer, brought home for him, and he would watch a movie a day, buying bootleg DVDs of *Blade Runner* and *2001: A Space Odyssey*. “I was a young boy who liked to ask, ‘Why?’ and so I turned to science for answers,” Chen says. “But when science couldn't explain everything, I turned to science fiction.”

But the very reforms that brought intergalactic epics to China also ushered in the myth of capitalism—the belief that “to get rich is glorious.” Along with it came rampant corruption, pollution, and inequality. China transformed from a nation of communes and Mao jackets into a land of Gucci-wearing super-tycoons and migrant workers hustling in Nike sweatshops. While most people were dazzled by the bounty of China's economic boom, Chen was ambivalent. In his first short story, “The Bait,” which he wrote as a precocious high schooler, aliens arrive on Earth, give humans an invaluable new technology, and eventually enslave them with it.

“I was a young boy who liked to ask, ‘Why?’ and so I turned to science for answers,” Chen says. “But when science couldn't explain everything, I turned to science fiction.”

Photograph: Yilan Deng

By the time Chen graduated from Peking University in 2004, China was perched on the edge of another revolution—the internet boom—and the Chinese people had bought into another myth: that technology had the power to change the world for good. After completing a dual degree in Chinese literature and film arts and enduring a brief and dispiriting stint in real estate, he left to work in the tech industry, first in advertising at [Baidu](#), then in marketing at [Google](#), all the while writing science fiction on the side. In 2008, Chen emailed the Chinese American science fiction writer Ken Liu to express admiration for his work. The two became online friends, and in 2011, Liu offered to translate “The Fish of Lijiang” into English.

That small, serendipitous idea would kick-start Liu's role as the preeminent English translator of Chinese sci-fi, and in turn set the stage for the genre's booming global popularity. (Liu went on to translate not only Liu Cixin's *The Three Body Problem* but also a diverse range of new voices, from Hao Jingfang to Xia Jia to Ma Boyong.)

Chen, still moonlighting as an author, kept taking jobs in tech into the 2010s. In 2013 he returned to Baidu to work in product marketing and strategy, then joined the marketing team at a virtual-reality startup in Beijing two years later. He was enchanted by the tech world's wide-eyed idealism and its central belief that a product, if scaled and optimized, could transform the lives of billions. But he also intuited that those ideals were "ultimately hollow at the core," Chen says. In 2017 he quit his job in VR to write full-time.

Dig Deeper with Our Longreads Newsletter

Sign up to get our best longform features, investigations, and thought-provoking essays, in your inbox every Sunday.

Your email

Will be used in accordance with our [Privacy Policy](#).

By then, though, such a move didn't exactly qualify as stepping off the treadmill. Indeed, in the past five years, China has become a nation obsessed with its own science fiction. What was once a niche subculture with a small circle of hardcore fans has blossomed into a full-fledged 66 billion yuan (\$10 billion) industry of films, books, video games, and theme parks. In 2015, Liu Cixin had become the first Chinese writer to win a Hugo Award, for *The Three Body Problem*. The next year, Hao Jingfang became the first Chinese woman to win a Hugo, for her novelette [Folding Beijing](#). *The Wandering Earth*, a 2019 film adaptation of a story by Liu Cixin, earned more than \$300 million in its first week after release and would become China's fourth-highest-grossing film ever. Once dismissed as frivolous children's literature, science fiction now commands the attention of all kinds of enterprises hoping to profit from its popularity: film studios

hungry for screenplay fodder, universities setting up sci-fi research institutions, talent agencies eager to jump on the bandwagon, tech companies keen to borrow the genre's aura of profundity, and even government officials looking to ennoble the national project of innovation.

In hindsight, the ascendancy of sci-fi in Chinese literature seems almost inevitable. After all, walking the streets of Beijing today can feel like inhabiting a cyberpunk fiction: Bright yellow shared bikes line the streets, facial recognition cameras hang on street lamps, robot servers deliver hot-pot dinners to your table. Liu Cixin has compared present-day China to the US after World War II, “when science and technology filled the future with wonder.” It’s also a time when science and technology have filled the present with a sense of estrangement, ennui, and anxiety, and a writer like Chen is a natural chronicler of that tension.

But for the people working in the genre, the sudden crush of attention and esteem has been vertiginous. “None of us had the goal of taking over the world,” says Emily Jin, a translator and protégé of Ken Liu who has worked closely with Chen. “We’re just a bunch of nerds having fun together.” In China, where rapid technological change keeps transfiguring the world beyond recognition, “one of the most important qualities in a writer is sensitivity—the ability to capture the strangeness in everyday life,” Chen says. And it can be hard to maintain that sensitivity when you’re squinting under the spotlights.

Chen turns 40 this year, but at first glance—lithe and graceful, sporting candy-colored Adidas high-tops—he could easily pass as a man in his twenties. He is cerebral, wry, and soft-spoken. Chen lives in Shanghai but came to Beijing for two weeks in October, where I meet him at a café. He switches seamlessly between languages (English and Mandarin), dialects (Teochew and Cantonese), and names (Chen Qiufan and Stanley Chan). He moves with ease between conversation topics, from autonomous terrorism to his trip to Burning Man, and midway through our discussion of Taoist philosophy, he excuses himself to take a quick call from his investment adviser. He also reads voraciously—citing Aldous Huxley, the Chinese novelist Lao She, and a 10,000-word academic paper on asteroid mining.

When I see him next, he's standing on a neon-lit stage in the banquet hall of the Grand Millennium Hotel, a slab of glass and steel in Beijing's central business district, giving a speech titled "Mind Reset and Embracing the Unknown: The Way of Science Fiction" to an audience of suited-up professionals. The *Financial Times* organized the conference, inviting a lineup of modern-day oracles—the CEO of a health care startup, a professor of economics, a machine-learning expert, and Chen—to prognosticate about the near future. To dress up for the occasion, Chen put on a blazer but kept the high-tops.

His visit to Beijing in October was packed with similar engagements. Tencent, the tech monolith behind China's super app WeChat, had invited Chen—again, a literature major—to predict developments in genetic engineering alongside a panel of world-class biophysicists, because he once wrote a story about genetically modified Neo Rats. Kai-Fu Lee summoned him to the glassy offices of his company, Sinovation Ventures, to join a panel on AI-human cooperation in the creative arts and to demonstrate the algorithm that writes fiction like Chen.

It is no surprise that Lee tapped Chen to participate in the panel. The two are collaborating on a book, [*AI 2041: Ten Visions for Our Future*](#), to be published this fall. Pairing Chen's speculative fiction with Lee's real-life technical perspective, the book explores how artificial intelligence will transform humankind and the global order in the next 20 years, in areas ranging from contactless dating to natural language processing to job displacement. "Computer scientists and science fiction writers don't speak the same language. If I describe how speech recognition works, it'll go right over people's heads," Lee tells me in a glass-walled conference room called Back to the Future (all the rooms at Sinovation are named after science fiction films: Total Recall, Cloud Atlas, Star Trek). "I needed a writing partner who understands the technology but can also tell a good story."

"I tend toward darker endings, and Kai-Fu toward the positive," Chen says. "He thinks of the narrative as a step-by-step process, like a manual, and I prefer to preserve a story's ambiguity."

Given all the time he spent at tech companies, Chen is both insider and outsider in an environment like Lee's; he's fluent in the language of data

and metrics and KPIs. But it's not just that he's at home in tech. I've noticed that in any new environment, Chen is observant and open-minded, careful to absorb its rules and rituals before synthesizing them as his own. Zipping from one engagement to the next, I watched him make a straight-laced professor feel at ease, charm a hippie Mongolian shaman over lunch, then pen an op-ed for a state-run newspaper at night.

This ability to move between disparate worlds has proved useful for navigating more perilous waters: Chinese politics. In China, writers have to be sensitive not only to commercial pressures but also to shifting political winds, evading the ever watchful eyes of the censors. They have to gauge what the government is thinking, pay attention to developments on the international stage, and discern what to play up and play down, what is OK to write, what is not, and when. In addition to capturing the attention of profit seekers, science fiction's popularity has piqued the interest of the authorities, who are eager to use its skyrocketing profile to boost their own agendas. "If I'm speaking to the government, I emphasize the importance of sci-fi as a tool to strengthen innovation and promote creativity. I fill my message with *zheng neng liang*," Chen says wryly, quoting a hackneyed catchphrase of officialdom. "How do you say that in English?"

"Positive energy," I respond.

Although Chen's *The Waste Tide* can be read as a dark and scathing critique of the government's failure to deal with ecological destruction, the novel can just as easily be interpreted as a criticism of American hypocrisy, a manifesto against global consumerism, or simply an apolitical exploration of post-human consciousness. "With science fiction, I can probe real-life issues through an imaginary narrative," Chen says, "without explicitly arguing who is right or wrong, good or evil."

Lately, though, the leeway afforded to cultural expression seems to be tightening even further. In recent years, authorities have scrubbed the internet clean of not only sensitive political content such as the Three T's—Tibet, Tiananmen, and Taiwan—but also anything the party deems immoral, from tattoos and one-night stands to hip hop. Last summer, film authorities issued a set of guidelines on how to make sci-fi films, urging filmmakers to "highlight Chinese values," "cultivate Chinese innovation," and

“thoroughly study and implement Xi Jinping thought.” These measures have made writers and publishers more paranoid about making a misstep. (Last year, Chen wanted to write a story about Californian independence, but he was advised against it by his publishers for fear that it would not get past the censors. “It wasn’t even about China,” he exclaims, rolling his eyes.)

Abroad, China’s science fiction writers find themselves caught in a tug-of-war between competing geopolitical agendas. The Western world has always perceived China as a monolith, reading Chinese literature through the lens of Western dreams and fears and viewing Chinese authors as either romantic dissidents clashing with the regime or soft-power tools parroting the Party’s agenda. Recent developments—the US-China trade war, conflicts with Huawei and ZTE, closed borders, and China’s aggressive posture as a technological superpower—have only exacerbated the situation. Hawkish academics pen reductive op-eds with subtitles such as “To Know What the Chinese Are Really Up To, Read the Futuristic Novels of Liu Cixin,” as if one novel could demystify a nation of a billion people. Whereas five years ago President Obama touted *The Three Body Problem* as a must-read, last September, Republican senators condemned its Netflix adaptation, criticizing Liu for his politics.

“We do the works a disservice when we focus on the geopolitics alone,” Ken Liu has written. But as much as China’s science fiction writers aspire to transcend the boundaries of nationalism, they find themselves swept into a whirlpool of forces outside of their control. According to Chen, the timing of *The Three Body Problem*’s publication was crucial. If it had come out today instead of in 2008—the days of bilateral relations, economic cooperation, and the Beijing Olympics—perhaps it would be censored by the Chinese government or condemned by the American one, targeted by both. “I stay away from politics, because—what do I know?” Chen says. “Sometimes I feel like I’m just being pulled along by the strings of history.”

Sunday evening, at the end of Chen’s jam-packed time in Beijing, we share a Didi ride from the Tencent headquarters back to the city center. I can tell he’s exhausted. “Nap a little?” I ask. He nods, and we both pull out our

headphones. I listen to Bon Iver; he tunes in to a meditation app, carving out a rare period of stillness after a long day.

For a moment, I'm reminded of a passage toward the end of "The Fish of Lijiang," when the protagonist discovers schools of fish swimming in the waterways. At first sight, they seem to be hovering calmly in the water, but as he looks closer he sees they are struggling to maintain their position. Once in a while, a fish gets pushed out of formation. "But soon," the passage continues, "tails fluttering, they fight their way back into place."

Late last year, 15 years after his first visit, Chen returned to Lijiang to find that it had transformed. The city had morphed into the fictionalized Lijiang of his story—a digitized tourist hub where self-driving cars shuttle smartphone-toting visitors around town and local delicacies are served up by automated bots.

"Today we live in a world dominated by technology," Chen says. "Where everything is driven by data, productivity, metrics." In China, with a swipe of a touchscreen, you can order a Luckin coffee that appears wordlessly at your doorstep and hail a nameless Didi driver whenever you want to go somewhere. We turn to algorithms for all the answers: where to eat, what to watch, who to love. The tech industry has learned how to monetize not only consumer goods but also experiences, attention, relationships. In many ways, we've become just like our devices—efficient, optimizable, operating faster than ever, caught in the endless churn of increasing productivity. But nobody knows to what end.

In any new environment, Chen is observant and open-minded, careful to absorb its rules and rituals before synthesizing them as his own.

Photograph: Yilan Deng

Of course, this is happening everywhere, but in China the transformation has been faster, vaster, and more bewildering. There's even a word for this sense of sped-up purposelessness today—an arcane, academic term that has exploded on Chinese social media and popped up in Chen's speeches: *involution*. The opposite of evolution, a process of involution spirals in on itself, trapping its participants. Originally used by anthropologists to

describe the dynamics that prevent agrarian societies from progressing, the term has become a shorthand used by people from all walks of life: tech workers clocking long hours at the office, delivery workers hustling from one gig to another, high school students toiling over college entrance exams. Technological progress has humanity caught in an inward-turning shell. Fifteen years after “The Fish of Lijiang,” everyone, like the story’s burned-out wanderers, is lost, adrift and desperately looking for something to hold onto. “The times have changed,” Chen says. “And the story needs to be renewed.”

So Chen has returned to the drawing board, doing what he does best: going out into the world and observing, gathering material for his next project. Lately he’s been interested in shamans. He’s gone on several field trips, interviewing and shadowing shamans, in hopes of understanding the rites, rituals, and traditions of China’s Buddhist and Taoist past. Last summer he met a shaman named Aodeng Toya through a WeChat group, and the two became fast friends. He stayed with her in Mongolia and spent a night at the foot of the sacred Bogd Khan mountain, where thousands of villagers gathered to pray to the mountain gods—drinking, eating, and dancing under the stars. For most of the year, Toya practices in Beijing, helping urbanites through all kinds of spiritual ailments. “Depression, overwork, bad luck with love, to ward off evil spirits, to commune with the dead,” she tells Chen and me over lunch. “I’m booked up every day for the next month.”

In our accelerated transition to a technological culture, Chen believes that we’ve lost so much—our relationship to our bodies, to nature, to our roots, to our faiths—and he has set out in search of them. “Shamans used to predict the weather, prevent disease, counsel leaders, show us how to coexist with the natural world,” he says. “Today, technological tools have replaced those functions, but not all. Why do we still go to them? What are we looking for?” We thought we could divine, precisely and quantifiably, where we’re headed, but instead find ourselves hurtling toward an increasingly precarious future: skyrocketing housing prices, soaring unemployment, deepening inequality, accelerating climate change, and a shattering global pandemic.

It's not surprising, then, that people are turning to shamans—and to science fiction. “They are treating sci-fi as an anchor to reality and science fiction writers as prophets, to help them make meaning of an unfolding future and navigate a treacherous world,” says Emily Jin, Chen’s translator. How do we reclaim meaning and purpose in the age of computers? What does spirituality look like when everything is mechanized and mass produced? When our lives are so deeply embedded in our devices, how do we preserve what makes us human? “As a result of all this attention, science fiction writers have been given a burden,” says Jing Tsu, a professor of comparative literature at Yale. “To be the soothsayers of technological salvation.”

But Chen is not a soothsayer, he’s a writer. And writers need time to write. “With all these panels and talks and attention, Chinese science fiction writers could find themselves stretched thin, eviscerated of their creative energy,” Tsu says. “If science fiction is to have a future in China, they need a space to create and keep maturing.”

Chen has ambitious goals for 2021: to wrap up his collaboration with Kai-Fu Lee, continue his research on shamans, and write a sequel to *The Waste Tide*. But he also wants to go home to Shantou to visit his parents (he didn’t get to see them much during the pandemic), find a few months of quiet in the Cangshan mountains, and maybe return to rock climbing. Like the rest of us, he has no idea where things are headed. What he does know is that he needs to slow down, find things to hold onto, and remember what makes him human: taking the time to swim against the current, fighting his way back into place.

If you buy something using links in our stories, we may earn a commission. This helps support our journalism. [Learn more.](#)

Let us know what you think about this article. Submit a letter to the editor at mail@wired.com.

Makeup by Xiaodi Zheng

This article was downloaded by **calibre** from <https://www.wired.com/story/science-fiction-writer-china-chen-qiufan/>

| [Section menu](#) | [Main menu](#) |

[Meghan O'Gieblyn](#)

[Ideas](#)

03.04.2021 08:00 AM

Why Can't I Stop Staring at My Own Face on Zoom?

WIRED's spiritual advice columnist on narcissism, Nabokov, and what it means to exist—really *exist*—for other people.


 A faceless man leans over a laptop with a face inside.

Illustration: Elena Lacey; Getty Images

Support Request:

I don't think I'm a particularly vain person, but whenever I'm on a Zoom call, I'm constantly looking at my own face instead of focusing on the other people. I'm not really admiring myself or scrutinizing my appearance. I'm just ... looking. What is this doing to my self-image? Should I turn off the self-view to avoid becoming a total narcissist?

—SEEN

Dear Seen—

Turning off the self-view would seem to be the easiest solution, but it's not one I would recommend—in fact, I'd strongly advise against it. From what I've heard, the sight of one's image disappearing from the gallery inspires, almost universally, anguish, terror, and in some cases profound existential despair of the sort that Vladimir Nabokov claims to have felt when he came across family photos taken before he was born. It feels, in other words, as though you no longer exist.

Your larger query—about the possible side effects of staring at yourself all day—is more complex and extends beyond the question of whether you’re a narcissist, which I will venture is unlikely. (Fear of narcissism, at least in the clinical sense, is self-disqualifying: Only those who don’t fit the definition worry that they do.) It’s not as though you’re alone in this fixation, in any event. People who would never dream of looking at a photo of themselves for more than a few seconds nevertheless report, like you, an inability to look away from their own face floating on the screen during virtual classes or PTA meetings, a preoccupation so intense that vanity remains, for me at least, an unconvincing explanation. Perhaps the more relevant question is not what the platform is doing to your self-image but, rather, what has already happened to it such that you—like so many others—are unable to stop staring at your pixelated reflection.

Zoom, of course, is not an ordinary mirror, or even an ordinary digital mirror. The self that confronts you on these platforms is not the static, poised image you’re accustomed to seeing in the bathroom vanity or the selfie view of your phone camera—a blank slate onto which you can project your fantasies and self-delusions—but the self who speaks and laughs, gestures and reacts.

It’s strange to recall how rare this view of the self-in-action was until recently. In your former life, you may have occasionally caught a glimpse of yourself laughing in a bar mirror or momentarily become distracted by the sight of yourself speaking to the salesperson standing behind you in the department store mirror. But it wasn’t until a year ago that we were constantly, relentlessly, obliged to watch ourselves in real time as we interacted with others, to see our looks of dismay, our empathetic nods, our impassioned gestures, all of which appeared so different from how we’d imagined them, if we imagined them at all.

“Oh, would some Power give us the gift to see ourselves as others see us!” wrote the poet Robert Burns in 1786, a virtuous plea for the objective self-knowledge that most of us remain more conflicted about. The technological “powers” of our age have, by and large, given us the inverse capacity: to make others see us as we see ourselves. We’re used to having complete control over our image—the angle, the filter, the carefully selected shot

among hundreds—and yet despite this, or perhaps because of it, there remains something fascinating about the unfiltered spontaneity of Zoom. The person you are seeing there is not the compliant reflection of your ego, but that most elusive of all entities: the self you become in the emergency of a social encounter, when all your premeditations fall away; the self who has always been familiar to your friends, family, and acquaintances while remaining largely invisible to you, its owner.

This desire—to see oneself as others do—is not in any way self-indulgent, but is crucial to forming and sustaining a viable sense of identity. Without getting too bogged down in theory and unnecessary references to Lacan, I'll briefly mention that mirrors have a social function, in that they reveal the self as an other, serving as a portal to the third-person point of view. The ability to pass the mirror test—the moment when infants stop seeing themselves as fragmented collections of body parts and recognize their image, whole, in the mirror—is a crucial rite of passage, marking the child's entrance into the social realm. The self is a fragile illusion that needs constant reinforcing, and this reinforcement happens most often through the gaze of other people, a process known in sociology as the “looking-glass self.” We form our identities in large part by imagining how we appear to others and speculating about their judgments of us.

One aspect of your former life you probably took for granted were the thousands of gestures and reactions, most of them small and registered unconsciously, that contributed to your sense of a solid, continuous self: the curt thank-you from a person squeezing past you on the subway, the brief eye contact from a coworker passing your desk, the laughter in response to a joke you made at a party. Although you weren't forced to literally watch yourself interact with others, you were seeing yourself mirrored back through these intersubjective moments, all of which served, in a very real sense, as proof that you still existed—not merely as an ambient consciousness but as a real, embodied presence in the world.

It seems not coincidental that the most common complaints about social isolation—feeling scattered and fragmented, the inability to remember what one did from one day to the next—are recognizable symptoms of the social self breaking down. After spending the better part of the day alone, in front

of various screens, it becomes all too easy to believe that you are simply a pair of hands moving across a keypad, a pair of eyes scanning a newsfeed, a mind whose boundaries increasingly blur with the virtual world you inhabit. The self-view on Zoom is, unexpectedly, anchoring, and to remove it is to confirm our worst fear—that we have, in fact, dissolved into the ether.

All of which is to say, your obsession with your image likely stems from an impulse that is entirely natural and, at root, pro-social. You are trying to retain an identity that has been gradually eroded throughout the recent disruptions to public life. Far from being an exercise in vanity, the sustenance of this identity, I'd argue, is crucial. Seeing oneself mirrored back by others is bound up in complex ways with the ability to feel empathy and with the construction of consensus reality—the shared belief that there exist objective truths outside the solipsism of our individual minds. This is why, in cases of extreme isolation, people often lose the ability to determine what is real and what is imagined and can no longer identify a clear line between the self and external objects.

I'm not saying, exactly, that you should spend even more time staring at yourself on calls. But the impulse could serve as a reminder of the collective need for mutual recognition—a need likely felt by all the other faces tiled alongside yours in the gallery. It might prompt you to remember that others on the call are similarly experiencing a tenuous sense of identity, that the standard technical queries that accompany each logon (Can you see me? Can you hear me?) might express a deeper longing. The great thing about Zoom is that the mirror is two-sided. Every nod, every responsive gesture, serves to remind the person speaking that they exist for other people, that they remain a vital presence in the world that all of us—still, together—inhabit.

Faithfully,

Cloud

Be advised that [CLOUD SUPPORT](#) is experiencing higher than normal wait times and appreciates your patience.

This article was downloaded by **calibre** from <https://www.wired.com/story/cloud-support-staring-at-my-face-on-zoom/>

| [Section menu](#) | [Main menu](#) |

[Samantha M. Shapiro](#)

[Backchannel](#)

03.04.2021 07:00 AM

Adoption Moved to Facebook and a War Began

As the adoption industry migrates to social media, regretful adoptees and birth mothers are confronting prospective parents with their personal pain—and anger.

family walking in the park

Art by Amber Lee Williams; Photograph by Juan Diego Reyes

When Erin and Justin decided to adopt a child at the beginning of 2016, they paid \$25,000 to sign on with one of the largest, most reputable adoption agencies in the United States. They imagined an orderly process, facilitated by lawyers and social workers.

They didn't foresee the internet trolls who would call them cunts and psychopaths. Nor did they imagine they'd be filing a police report, or pleading with [Facebook](#) to delete posts that called them human traffickers. They didn't expect the internet to be involved in the process at all.

Erin and Justin (not their real names) met in Chicago in 2010 on a dating site. Erin was 37 with blond, beachy waves and a Michigan accent. She was divorced at the time and approached the dating market pragmatically, uninterested in wasting time with men who were not serious prospects. When she met Justin, she knew she'd found what she was looking for. "He was so kind, different from anyone I'd dated, and I knew he'd be a good dad," she told me. They married in 2011 and planned to have children, but when Erin got a job offer that took them to New York City, they decided to wait until they were settled. Then, when they were ready to start trying, Erin learned that she had gone into premature menopause. "I wasn't devastated, because I knew I wanted to be a mom, and it didn't matter to me how my child came to me," she said. They forged ahead, excited to adopt.

But several months after they signed with the adoption agency, it filed for bankruptcy. Erin and Justin contacted an attorney, who advised them to

move their search online.

The adoption industry has never been very well regulated, and there is a history of certain firms engaging in unethical practices. But when agencies were the primary facilitators of adoption, they could at least perform basic vetting of expectant mothers and adoptive parents and manage complex legal processes. The open marketplace of the web removed that layer of oversight. A 2012 [report](#) on adoption and the internet, by the now defunct Donaldson Adoption Institute, found, among other things, that online adoptions create opportunities for fraud and for financial incentives that might push expectant mothers to give up their children. Online, prospective adoptive parents negotiate with expectant mothers directly via Craigslist ads. People who adopt children, often from overseas, and then change their minds find new homes for them in Facebook “adoption disruption” groups, without any supervision from child welfare agencies. “One thing that is true about adoption and the internet is that no one is paying attention,” says Adam Pertman, who was the executive director of the Donaldson Adoption Institute. “Whatever is happening is happening because it can, and it’s having enormous impact—some good, some bad, and some unknowable—without any repercussions.”

Erin and Justin signed up for a platform called Adoptimist (“We’re a technology company devoted to family-building. We are not an adoption agency or law firm”) and set up a Facebook page about their “adoption journey.” They filled their profiles with personal information, describing their love of basketball, football, and triathlons. Erin wrote that she came from a large Italian family and hoped to raise her children speaking Italian and English. They shared a picture of the two of them goofing around with a young nephew, another of them eating ice cream.

When they posted their profile to Adoptimist in 2017, Justin and Erin were approached by a woman from Las Vegas. She said she was pregnant with twins and had been diagnosed with cancer, and that she wanted the couple to raise the babies. After many texts and updates about the babies’ heart rates, and an invitation to come meet the twins in the hospital, they discovered the woman had never been pregnant.

She was what Erin described as an “emotional scammer,” someone seemingly uninterested in money who torments prospective adoptive parents for reasons known only to them. Erin said another woman on Adoptimist who claimed to be pregnant sent her a message saying she was hungry and asking her to order a pizza. This was, Erin said, how most of the couple’s interactions on the site went. (Philip Acosta, the president and cofounder of Adoptimist, said that the company has in recent years focused on combating scammers. The site now offers to review the IP addresses of anyone who contacts a prospective adoptive parent, and also alerts users to different types of scams on a “scam blog.”)

Justin and Erin joined a support group for parents seeking to adopt. Several of the couples in their group who had already adopted children passed along advice about using Facebook’s advertising analytics to hone their search. So Justin and Erin paid the social media company between \$25 and \$150 a month to promote their adoption page in the feeds of women age 15 to 65 in college towns around the US. This range, they reasoned, might reach a grandparent or a friend of a pregnant woman.

Soon after they started buying targeted Facebook ads, Erin’s mother became seriously ill. Erin flew to the suburbs of Detroit, where she was raised, to help. For a hectic few weeks, she and her sister took turns staying in the hospital with their mother and watching Erin’s five nieces and nephews.

One night, Justin called Erin and, sounding stricken, asked if she’d seen their adoption page. She hadn’t had time to check it. “Oh my God,” he told her. “You have to go look now.”

That night in Michigan, when Erin logged on to Facebook, she saw, interspersed with encouraging messages, a torrent of abuse. Perhaps because of the increased exposure Facebook analytics offered, their adoption profile had come to the attention of anti-adoption blogs and Facebook groups. Now their profile had been screenshotted and tagged and mocked on many other pages. “How will you have time for a baby while you’re resting your facelift, and getting all that work done?” one poster asked. Another proclaimed, “Get a dog, you stupid cunts.” “No child deserves her ... even the ‘man upstairs’ saw that.”

In the guest bedroom in her sister's house, Erin stayed up late into the night deleting the comments on their adoption profile and trying to report the users who posted them. "I was trying to plug the dam, but there wasn't enough time. It was a 20-person job," she said. "There was no one to talk to at Facebook." (A Facebook spokesperson said, "We continue to improve the technology we use to find bullying and harassing content" and that it had "removed the content that violates our policies.")

Dig Deeper with Our Longreads Newsletter

Sign up to get our best longform features, investigations, and thought-provoking essays, in your inbox every Sunday.

Your email

Will be used in accordance with our [Privacy Policy](#).

As she jumped from one anti-adoption page to another, Erin saw that she and Justin were far from the only targets. Other prospective adoptive parents were called "vultures trolling the net for babies." One group had shared the Adoptimist profile of a gay male couple, asking sardonically, "Which one will be listed on the birth certificate as the woman who gave birth to the child?"

Erin was dumbfounded. "I didn't even know anti-adoption was a thing," she told me.

The anti-adoption movement lives in Facebook groups and on blogs with names like the Wounded Adoptee, Changing the Adoption Narrative, and Adopted Ball of Hate, and it is comprised of people who wouldn't have found each other elsewhere: older women who, as "unwed mothers" in the 1950s and '60s, were forced to give babies up for adoption; women whose churches still pressure them to give up children born outside of marriage; adoptees who want to overturn laws in 40 states that deny them unrestricted access to their original birth certificates.

The people in this movement come to it from a wide range of perspectives. Some recognize the value of adoption in certain circumstances and have

specific goals, like improving federal oversight, eliminating practices that are coercive to birth mothers, or giving them more time to reverse a decision to give up a child. Others see adoption as wrong in all cases, as an assault on some transcendent natural bond only possible between a biological mother and child. Some are finding community and expressing feelings of anger and pain for the first time; birth mothers describe pressure, regret, and lifelong mourning for the children they gave up, while adoptees talk about their sense of estrangement and about not knowing their medical history.

Members of these groups run an informal counter-messaging campaign to standard adoption narratives, one which incorporates their trauma and the role that poverty plays in adoption. When the economic devastation from Covid-19 shutdowns became apparent in April, Lifetime Adoption, an agency based in Florida, put up a blog post assuring prospective adoptive parents that the pandemic would open new opportunities. “Difficult times bring a greater need for adoptive parents,” the post read. “Lifetime Adoption has found that phone calls from potential birth mothers are three times what they normally are.” Anti-adoption groups took screenshots and critiqued the post, highlighting the more troubling issues underlying its assumptions, until the agency took it down.

The tactics that Erin encountered—targeting adoptive parents online, mocking their profiles, and calling them names like “womb wet baby snatcher”—are not the standard in the anti-adoption movement. The people who engage in those behaviors make up a small minority, but a vocal one.

For a while, one of the more aggressive anti-adoption posters and commenters was a woman whose online moniker is Julie Gray. She has been removed and blocked from many groups because of her use of harsh language to both birth mothers, whom she calls “relinquishers,” and adoptive parents. Gray was adopted, and she told me that one of her goals in trolling adoptive parents’ profiles was “to scare the crap out of them so they change their mind altogether. I want to stop other children from going through what I went through.”

When Erin told her adoption support group about the response to her profile, other couples acknowledged that they’d been [trolled](#) too. They told

her, “Delete, block, and don’t engage,” Erin recalled.

But Erin wasn’t the type to back down. “I’m an attorney. I always advocate for my client, and now I felt I had to advocate for my family. I was not going to shut up and ignore it and walk away. I’m Italian, I’m hot-blooded. If I see something that’s wrong for me or someone else, I am not going to be silent.”

Art by Amber Lee Williams; Photograph by Juan Diego Reyes

Whenever she saw adoptive parents being harassed, she reported it to Facebook. It seemed to Erin that Facebook removed a post only if a significant number of people reported it. (The company says one report is enough if a post violates its policies.) So in September 2017 she started a small Facebook group whose sole purpose was to monitor and report anti-adoption harassment. She sometimes commented acerbically on those posts she reported, and quickly became known in the anti-adoption community. One commenter wrote an ominous post saying she had eaten dinner at the restaurant on the ground floor of Erin’s Manhattan apartment building. Another post named the law firm where Erin worked and discussed strategies for getting her disbarred. At that point, Erin says, she filed a police report about the woman who claimed to have been in her building.

Although she was in frequent battle with the anti-adoption movement, Erin shared some of their concerns. She found that the inconsistency of laws from state to state created confusion and believed all adoptees should have access to their original birth certificates. At some point Erin had signed up for a newsletter from an adoption facilitator who connected prospective parents with birth parents for a fee. The emails included what the facilitator called “situations”: brief descriptions of children available for adoption along with a price, usually in the tens of thousands of dollars. The idea of putting a “price” on a child above basic expenses incurred by the birth mother disturbed Erin. She thought it might encourage women to place their babies for adoption. She was especially horrified to see enormous race-based discrepancies: In one situation a white child was \$45,000, while in another a Black child was \$20,000.

Then, in the fall of 2017, a pregnant woman from the South reached out to Erin and Justin through Facebook. The woman was in a long-term relationship, was raising three other children, and had previously placed another child for adoption. Erin tried not to get her hopes up, but she had a good feeling as the months passed and the woman kept in regular contact. New York state has strict rules on payments to birth mothers: It permits prospective adoptive parents to give money only for certain expenses and in the final months of pregnancy and just after childbirth. The expectant mother was on Medicaid and didn't need help with medical expenses, but Justin and Erin paid her \$1,450 a month for three months because she said her doctor ordered her to stop working toward the end of her pregnancy.

As the baby's due date neared, Justin and Erin drove south to meet the family. They all went out for dinner, and Erin gave the birth mother a spa package.

When the baby girl was born, Erin and Justin were in the hospital. They held her soon after she was delivered. Erin cut the umbilical cord. They were overjoyed. Erin and Justin stayed with her in the neonatal intensive care unit for several weeks—she had breathing problems—before returning to New York City.

Erin took down her adoption page, but she continued challenging the harassment she saw on Facebook. For a while, she settled into a kind of routine. She'd tell the trolls to get a hobby, or worse. Sometimes, she'd threaten legal action. There was an anti-adoption Facebook group called Ask a Birth, First, Natural Mom, which Erin had taken to calling Ask a Moron in her posts encouraging her group to report it. She saw the heated exchanges as mutual sport. "They know who I am and know that I troll those pages. They don't block me. They like the engagement," she told me. "It was a cat-and-mouse game."

Then, in August 2019, something happened that changed the tone for Erin. The previous January, when her daughter's adoption was finalized in court, Erin had posted an album on Facebook that she hashtagged #familyday and #gotchaday, a phrase sometimes used by adoptive parents. In addition to taking photos at court, Erin had made a poster with her daughter's full name and stylized numbers showing her birthday and the date "you were forever

ours.” Erin put a bow in the toddler’s blond curls and took pictures of their little family posed on a white leather couch in front of the framed poster.

Erin believed her personal Facebook page’s privacy settings allowed only friends to see posts. But months after she posted the celebratory picture, she received notifications that it had been shared on two anti-adoption sites: Ask a Birth, First, Natural Mom and a group Erin hadn’t heard of: America’s Taken.

On America’s Taken, which has more than 14,000 followers, the picture, with Erin’s daughter’s full name in view, was posted with Erin’s name along with hashtags about kidnapping and trafficking. Soon others shared the link, and the mocking comments began.

That was nothing new, but now Erin’s name and her daughter’s were spreading with those hashtags. “The last thing I want is for her picture and mine to be on a dark web, as if we were available for trafficking,” Erin told me.

Erin mobilized her group to report America’s Taken and emailed Facebook repeatedly. Eventually Facebook removed the picture from pages that posted it.

America’s Taken is run by Geri Pfeiffer, who lives in a trailer heated by a wood-burning stove in central Oklahoma, near the end of a narrow dead-end road. Pfeiffer, who is 61 and stands 6’2”, has a big laugh and wears clear Coke-bottle-thick bifocals. She identifies herself on social media as a “hell raiser,” “memaw,” and “activist,” and in her spare time she knits prayer shawls for a local church.

On the America’s Taken Facebook page, Pfeiffer posts pictures of children who have been removed from their homes by child protective services, placed in foster care, and then adopted by new families. There are 135,000 adoptions every year in the US, and about 40 percent are from foster care. The birth parents in those cases no longer have the right to visit their children. The children’s names are often changed, and many states still seal a child’s original birth certificate.

Art by Amber Lee Williams

Pfeiffer logs long hours advising birth parents all over the country on how to find their children. She can be relentless. She once sent Facebook messages to nearly every business owner in a small northwestern Washington town, asking if anyone knew the whereabouts of a child who'd been in foster care there. (It worked.) The tougher cases she brings to the online network of amateur detectives who are known in the adoption community as search angels. Many of them are former adoptees or birth parents, but some are just genealogy buffs with time on their hands. Most use online consumer tools like Ancestry.com or data-mining sites like Beenverified or Spokeo.

A typical post on America's Taken might show a photo of a child (who a relative has asked Pfeiffer to locate) along with a message:

"As soon as you hit that 18th Birthday ... your grandma and great grandma ... will be waiting.

You weren't hard to find.

They love you. They miss you. They have waited a long time."

When she saw Erin's "forever ours" post, Pfeiffer had thought nothing of sharing a few choice words about it; she frequently compares adoption to kidnapping and trafficking. But Erin fought back. That week, Erin and Pfeiffer—and their respective followers—got into increasingly heated exchanges. On her Facebook group page, Erin posted, "Looks like the tables have turned. How does it feel, Geri Pfeiffer?" When Pfeiffer got online again, she composed a message to her followers with Erin's name: "To think that this attorney has adopted a child is another adoption horror story in the making. A child that was adopted to satisfy the narcissistic need of a psychopath attorney to be a 'mother.'"

Pfeiffer started America's Taken because of her own experience with child protective services. In 2009, one of Pfeiffer's sons—who was 19 at the time—learned that he had become a father. Neither her son nor the mother was prepared to raise a child, Pfeiffer told me, so Pfeiffer took over caring for

the baby. “I just held him that whole first year,” she remembered. “His skin was paper thin.” She had the boy baptized in a white tuxedo. When her grandson was old enough, she enrolled him in preschool through Head Start.

Then, when he was 4, everything fell apart. On Halloween morning in 2013, a witness said she saw Pfeiffer swinging her purse at the boy in front of his preschool, “with such force causing the child to be knocked approximately 10 feet down a concrete ramp causing scrapes to his left and right forearms and face and head,” according to court records. When we spoke, Pfeiffer denied that this happened; in a court record she had said “he was spanked outside of school grounds.”

When the Halloween report was filed, Pfeiffer was on probation for an incident of assault and battery. (In an official statement, she said a woman she knew attacked her with a tire iron, and “I fought off the blows with a rake. I ran to her truck and put it in neutral, and it ran down the hill and into a tree.”) Her grandson went into foster care.

Both Pfeiffer and her son say they tried to get the boy back. Pfeiffer completed an anger management course. Meanwhile her grandson bounced from one foster placement to another. Records from family court are sealed, so it is not possible to know the full details of this case.

Eventually one of the boy’s foster families filed adoption papers. The last time Pfeiffer saw her grandson was at their final visit in the county Department of Human Services building.

Afterward, Pfeiffer fell into a sleepless depression. She shut the door to her grandson’s room and didn’t open it for two years. She finally cleaned it out when her teenage granddaughter asked to take it over. Her granddaughter hung up a tapestry with an elephant on it, and Pfeiffer moved the boy’s belongings into storage containers. During my visit, she unpacked one that held the preemie outfit the baby wore the day she first met him, the small white tuxedo from his baptism, a plastic octopus he used to fall asleep with, his Spider-Man wallet, and a lock of dirty-blond hair from his first haircut.

“Precious memories from a boy that doesn’t exist anymore,” Pfeiffer said sadly.

She still occasionally feels something embedded in the corner of her quilt and discovers a crayon or Lego sword lodged in the fabric. “Right now the grief is not even acknowledged once your rights are terminated,” she said. “You’re just relegated to the trash heap of life.”

The termination of parental rights has been called the “civil death penalty,” because of its severity and finality. It is overwhelmingly levied against poor families. Some children are taken away from parents who abuse them horribly—and others who should be removed are not and die at the hands of abusers. Nationally, the majority of children are removed from their homes by child protective services not for abuse but neglect, which can be a more subjective state. Neglect can mean a child was left in a hot car for hours or that a child’s parent is an addict. Or it can mean that a child was alone at home while their mother worked an overnight shift or went to the store, or that there’s not enough food in the fridge. In other words, poverty can create conditions that lead to neglect, and the exigencies of poverty can also be interpreted as neglect.

Art by Amber Lee Williams

Many anti-adoption advocates, as well as some experts in child-welfare reform, argue that helping families get what they need—rehab, food stamps, child care subsidies—should be prioritized over permanently removing children from their parents. In a [2019 paper](#), “A Cure Worse Than the Disease? The Impact of Removal on Children and Their Families,” Vivek Sankaran, a professor at the University of Michigan Law School, and his coauthors note that removing children from their homes is traumatic for both parents and children, and that standards for removal vary from state to state. In some states there must be evidence that a child is in immediate danger; in others, suspicion of neglect is sufficient cause. Some states allow a parent to appeal the removal within 24 hours; in others a parent may have to wait 10 days. As a result, the authors note, states and even individual counties have widely varying rates of removing children. In 2017, West Virginia removed 10 times as many children from their homes as neighboring Virginia did. In Oklahoma, where Pfeiffer lives, the number of

children who are adopted from foster care is far higher than the national average.

Other child advocates, however, point out that, whatever its cause, neglect can be profoundly damaging to children. Elizabeth Bartholet, director of the Child Advocacy Program at Harvard Law School, agrees that “if we eliminated poverty in this country, that would be the best abuse- and neglect-prevention program.” But protecting the welfare of children, she says, has to take priority over parental rights.

In some cases, a judge will rule that a birth parent poses a danger to a child and will prohibit the parent from making contact. But many avenues exist for a birth parent to reconnect with a child unsupervised. The internet, along with widely available genetic testing, has dismantled the possibility of a truly closed adoption. “Judges’ strictures mean nothing if a child can search for his birth mother without [adoptive] parents knowing,” says Pertman, now the president and CEO at the National Center of Adoption Permanency. “But that doesn’t mean an 11-year-old should be forming relationships with people he doesn’t know without parents’ knowledge.”

Martin Guggenheim, an advocate for parental rights and a professor at NYU Law School, who believes many removals are unjust, is not surprised that birth parents and relatives attempt DIY reunions through the web. When he saw the America’s Taken Facebook page, he told me, “When you think about it, how do you not create this website?”

Other online groups have emerged where there are gaps in adoption processes. Adoption-disruption groups on Facebook, where adopted children are “re-homed,” emerged at least partly because there is little post-adoption support and monitoring; some families know almost nothing about the issues their overseas-adopted children faced or how to cope with their medical or behavioral challenges. In private adoptions, the lawyer who represents a birth mother is often paid for by the adoptive family, and some adoption agencies fund flashy public relations campaigns that paint the experience in sunny tones. There are no major organizations that share with expectant mothers potential downsides or that help them with their rights.

Renee Gelin started an organization and Facebook group that plays that role by crowdsourcing assistance and advice that birth mothers might not have access to. As a single parent, Gelin gave up her second child for adoption 10 years ago because she was under crushing financial pressure at the time. Her job as a contractor in IT offered no maternity leave, and her health insurance would not cover her high-risk pregnancy. She was paid too much to qualify for Medicaid.

Just weeks before her son was born, Gelin agreed to place him with a family in another state. As soon as he was on the plane, she regretted the choice. Although she had arranged an open adoption for her son, she says that the adoptive family ended the relationship when they found critical blog posts she had written expressing grief about the process. Gelin felt she hadn't understood that open adoptions exist at the discretion of the adopting family. In fact, they are not legally enforceable in all states, and where they are enforceable the cost of a lawyer can be prohibitive for a birth mother.

Gelin's organization, called Saving Our Sisters, tries to persuade birth mothers that financial strain shouldn't prevent them from keeping their children. When a woman who is having second thoughts reaches out to SOS online, the group tries to find a "sister on the ground" nearby to bring her diapers, a month's rent, or a baby swing. Gelin says SOS has had around 90 "saves"—adoptions in process that the group helped reverse—in the past six years. Gelin transferred the blog about her adopted son to a public Facebook page years ago and still posts letters and updates to him, often signed, "Mom."

The woman who adopted Pfeiffer's grandson once gave her a framed image of the boy's handprint. Pfeiffer took the handprint, painted it red, and made it the bloody-looking logo of America's Taken. She printed up T-shirts and signs and stood outside the family court in Guthrie in front of her truck, which had a decal that read "my grandson is a victim of forced adoption in logan county." She handed out pamphlets and told her version of the story to anyone who would listen. At the time, her message did not get much further than the Guthrie courthouse steps.

But in 2013, Pfeiffer enrolled in a University of Oklahoma Medical Center study on congestive heart failure. The hospital gave her an iPhone 4 so she

could access a medical app she needed for the study. She had never used a smartphone, or even a computer. “I ran a laundromat,” she told me, “and you don’t need computers to clean people’s underwear.”

One day, as she entered her health data in the iPhone app, her brother asked her if she knew she could use it for other stuff. She didn’t know. He showed her how to text and then helped her set up a Facebook account. Pfeiffer immediately saw the possibilities. Here she could hold up her sign 24 hours a day, all over the country. The first post she wrote was about her grandson. Within minutes, other people were posting stories to her page of children they were looking for. “It just snowballed,” she told me. “The first person replied within a minute, and it just kept climbing and climbing.”

As Pfeiffer got more familiar with the phone, she started tracking her grandson’s adoptive family. Pfeiffer has liver disease as well as advanced heart failure, and she told me it’s unlikely she will live long enough to see her grandson turn 18, the age at which she could seek him out. She leaves messages for him on the internet. “I want him to know how hard we searched for him,” she says. “And I’m going to spend every minute I have left searching for other taken kids, teaching other parents to leave clues in cyberspace.”

In June 2019, Erin got a new message from her daughter's birth mother. The woman thought she might be pregnant again and wasn’t sure what she wanted to do. She eventually asked if Erin and Justin wanted to adopt the new baby.

Erin had loved becoming a mother. She and Justin had recently put their adoption journey Facebook page back up, hoping to add to their family. The prospect of a biological sibling for their daughter was more than they had dreamed of.

Art by Amber Lee Williams; Photograph by Juan Diego Reyes

I spoke to Erin when the birth mother was six months pregnant. At the time, Erin saw her adoption story as a rebuke to the ones she often saw on anti-adoption websites. The birth mother had reconnected unprompted, which confirmed to Erin that she had never felt bullied or coerced. Erin said she

had made a book of pictures of her daughter's birth family that she read to her, and she shared pictures of the girl with the birth mother.

But when we talked again a few months later, Erin's view had changed. In February, the birth mother had abruptly stopped returning her messages. Erin grew increasingly frantic and eventually learned that the baby—a boy—had already been born and was in the NICU, along with another couple who also believed they were the baby's adoptive parents.

It turned out that, some months earlier, the birth mother had posted anonymously on a Facebook adoption group and had connected with the other family. Justin and Erin rushed south with their daughter. When the boy was ready to leave the NICU, they were given temporary custody. They brought him to a townhouse they had rented, where their daughter was thrilled to meet her brother. They nested for almost four months.

The custody case became baroque. The birth mother was indicted for unlawful exchange of money in an adoption, a charge she said she was fighting as of early March. A judge ruled that the boy should be placed in foster care until custody was decided, with both couples granted an hour per week to visit him. The birth mother and her aunt also filed for custody. The birth mother and Erin described a scenario in which all four families visited the baby once a week in the midst of the pandemic. Eventually the second couple dropped their custody claim, and the baby was sent home with his birth mother, where he has lived for months. Erin and Justin are still pursuing custody.

Erin told me about this turn of events in June 2020. At the time, she was hunkered down in the rental, awaiting the final custody decision. She was sad and seething. But for the first time since we initially spoke nearly two years earlier, her target had changed. "The anti-adoption folks? Honestly, I get it now. I get why they say some of the things they say. A lot of their concerns are legitimate," she told me. "There's a dark side to adoption."

In the months she and her husband had spent with their daughter and her brother, she felt they had bonded. Then the boy was put in foster care. In her years of monitoring anti-adoption groups, Erin had read again and again about the trauma a child suffers when removed from his family. Now she

was haunted by the rupture and the baby's experience of losing the "only home he ever knew."

"It tore me up inside," she said. "I can't imagine what he must be thinking and feeling."

The experience confirmed to her the need for federal adoption reform. Maybe, she said, it made sense to have 50 different sets of state adoption laws when adoptions were done locally. But in a world where a child's future may be mediated on various digital platforms with little accountability, one set of rules is needed. For starters, "there needs to be a federal register of hopeful adoptive parents and birth moms," Erin said. "There should be a registry to see if someone is matched or not matched."

When I reached the birth mother in February, she told me that she had decided on adoption for her daughter, another child, and initially planned on it for her son, because she was raising three other children and is against abortion. She thought the kids would have a better life. But it was not easy. In the hospital, she told me, she asked for the baby to be put in a separate room with the adoptive parents. "After giving birth knowing the baby was going with someone else," she said. "That's a lot to endure." She got very quiet on the phone. "I step away because it gets harder and harder to say, 'Well, yes, this is what I want to do.'"

She had liked the idea of getting to know a family directly through Facebook. But the bitter fight over her son had convinced her she had not really known the people who adopted her children. She told me, "Never again would I choose adoption." The baby is now a year old.

When we spoke in June, Erin said she had mostly stopped following anti-adoption groups on Facebook. But the activists were on her mind as she navigated a chaotic custody case born out of unverified Facebook threads. In a vacuum of oversight, the anti-adoption groups seemed to be the only ones tracking, however imperfectly, the adoption industry. More than once when we spoke that day, she said, almost wistfully, "I would be really curious to hear what they would say about this."

This article was downloaded by **calibre** from <https://www.wired.com/story/adoption-moved-to-facebook-and-a-war-began/>

| [Section menu](#) | [Main menu](#) |

[Virginia Heffernan](#)

[Ideas](#)

03.02.2021 08:00 AM

While Jack Dorsey Mans the Monastery

The small but boisterous slice of Twitter that's preoccupied with politics imagines @jack, the author of our collective Twitter being, as all-powerful. He's not.


 illustration of Jack Dorsey

Illustration: Sam Whitney

The day of January 6, when he hurled down the lightning bolt that cast Donald Trump out of Twitter and into outer darkness, should have been @jack's debut as an imperial overlord. But @jack never seems to flex. This can be maddening. Just when you want him to act Churchillian, @jack is more reticent than ever, a cipher, more Sphinx than Zeus. Last summer, [The New York Times](#) asked Jack Dorsey whether he's “one of the most powerful people on earth,” and his voice was like a dial tone: “No.”

On January 13, @jack threaded ambivalently about the Trump ban, ruminating on the question of how to address “offline harm as a result of online speech” while holding sacred “the noble purpose and ideals of the open internet.” He left his pensées unfinished.

Dorsey doesn't generally use Twitter to tweet. “I use it to listen and to observe and to understand our world and my world and myself,” he told the *Times*. At the same time, he views Twitter as a cosmic verity, a force that mysteriously predates his cocreation of it in 2006. Twitter “wasn't something we really invented. It was something we discovered.” Like suffering, like samsara, Twitter was just always there.

Forty-four-year-old Jack Patrick Dorsey, the reclusive and peripatetic maxibillionaire from St. Louis, exists, presumably, in time and space, somewhere behind his Twitter handle. But it's @jack, that numinous avatar, that's credited with bestowing on his kingdom the relative well-being, quiet, and order that appears to bless us only when Donald Trump is in exile from civilization. The nation would come to know these unfamiliar sensations at the inauguration of President Biden, weeks after @jack, or someone acting in his name, enacted the excommunication. In retrospect, @jack was not just decisive and swift; he was prescient. So he could be forgiven for giving a spike-the-football press conference. But in the weeks since, he's remained every bit as elusive as Q. Or the Holy Ghost. Or Shiva the Destroyer.

And so it has been, for four strange years. @jack is everywhere and nowhere. He's either the emperor of geopolitics or a lost druid. The relatively small but boisterous slice of Twitter that's preoccupied with American politics has come to imagine @jack, the author of our collective Twitter being, as all-powerful. We call out for him, but he stays silent. We beg him to smite trolls; he does nothing. We plead for him to exile Nazis; he retreats to a meditation cushion. Sometimes (as in 2017) he [adds characters](#) to our rations. Sometimes (as in 2020) he introduces Fleets, which no one asked for. Because, like other deities, he's capricious—and often seems not to exist—we're stuck with tea leaves: what he likes, tweets, retweets. None of it adds up. All that can be said with any confidence is that @jack in general likes a laissez-faire Twitter—whether out of Buddhist acceptance of what is, blithe indifference, catch-all libertarianism, or anxiety about his untrained capacity for moral discernment.

When incarnate, as in occasional appearances and paparazzi photos, Jack Dorsey does little to give the lie to the online fantasy of him. In October, as he [testified before Congress](#) via video, he wore a foot-long gray-brown beard and a gold ring in his left nostril. Once a Missouri fashion model and tinkerer enchanted by dispatch technology, then a springy boyish billionaire on the TED-Davos circuit, Dorsey has now gone full Elminster Aumar. His deep-set eyes can still be called piercing, and the vanity of his early blue-steel pose is not lost. What is lost is the look of complaisance that defines young founders looking for capital. Dorsey, like @jack, no longer truckles to anyone.

But there's a twist. There is one at Twitter who takes action while Dorsey mans the monastery. She is Vijaya Gadde, Twitter's former general counsel, and now head of legal, policy, and trust and safety issues. At 46, Gadde wields so much influence at Twitter that she terrified the gnarly crowd at the late wingnut social platform Parler. One Parlerite called her “Goebbels in a pantsuit.” Another warned, “You don't know her face or name because she rules in the shadows.”

Off the mark, of course. Unlike Dorsey, Gadde is famously non-shadowy and forthright. Born in India, she grew up in Southeast Texas when it was still studded with sundown towns, which shut out people of color with threats, violence, and racist statutes. When her father, a jobless chemical engineer, found work knocking on doors to collect insurance premiums, he had to seek permission from no less than the local Ku Klux Klan leader to walk in his own neighborhood. “My family felt very powerless in those moments,” Gadde said in 2016, when she was honored at NYU School of Law, from which she graduated in 2000. “When people ask me why I went to law school—I went to law school to make sure that people have a voice and that people have someone to fight for them.” She now sits on the board of Mercy Corps, a global humanitarian group and NGO that is currently working to provide emergency supplies to especially vulnerable families and communities during the Covid-19 crisis.

Gadde's earnest moral commitments at Twitter might be explained in part by timing. She joined Twitter not at its start as a group-text goof by Dorsey and his crew in 2006, but in 2011, one decade ago, when it moved to center stage as a communication nexus for the so-called Arab Spring. Where most current social media leaders had no idea what they were getting into in the lighter-hearted days of Web 2.0, Gadde instantly saw the seriousness of the endeavor. She could see Twitter's activist possibilities, as well as its exploitation by those looking to stoke disinformation and racist speech. Above all, as she rose in the ranks, she gained Dorsey's druid ear. As one Twitter official told Politico, “I can't imagine a world where Jack looks at [Gadde] and says, ‘No.’”

In fairness, digging in and impeding change is not Dorsey's thing, so Twitter may for the foreseeable future be synched to the clear-eyed moral

vision of Gadde, whose Twitter feed, @vijaya, is focused more on Amanda Gorman's poetry and public health infrastructure than on Bitcoin, a topic that preoccupies @jack.

And while Gadde tweets without reservation about human rights initiatives and progressive projects she admires, and brooks right-wing trolls, the CEO of Twitter continues to be singularly ill-suited to the world of barbs and quips he helped create. He openly prefers the otherworldly interconnectiveness of the service to the tweets that serve as its component parts. When Dorsey reflects on the dynamic of tweeting in interviews, he still hearkens back to the heady early days, when it was “amazing” to be able to tell friends all at once, by making phones buzz in their pockets, that you were headed to a yoga class.

When he had to show up to thread about the Trump ban on January 13, though, he showed up as himself. He expressed his uncertainty, spoke with little ego, and made it clear he was just another human, improvising on insufficient data, hoping to promote both peace and openness in a world where those values are sometimes at odds. However much Twitter might urge him to play oracle, @jack will refuse. The last sentence of the thread's intro tweet would make an excellent epitaph and an excellent koan: “Was this correct?”

This article appears in the March issue. [Subscribe now.](#)

This article was downloaded by **calibre** from <https://www.wired.com/story/twitter-jack-dorsey-mans-monastery/>

By [Elliot Ackerman](#) and [Admiral James Stavridis](#)

[Backchannel](#)

03.02.2021 07:00 AM

2034, Part VI: Crossing the Red Line

“Eventually, the Americans would find them. But by then it would be too late.”

 A Russian vessel breaks through ice.

Illustration: Owen Freeman

01:46 MAY 22, 2034 (GMT+2)

BARENTS SEA

For the third night in a row, Farshad struggled to sleep. His cabin was right above the waterline, and he could hear the ice floes glancing off the bow, hitting like the tolling of a bell— *dong, dong, dong*. All through the night, the noise was relentless. When he had arrived in Tartus weeks before, a set of orders had awaited him. He wouldn't be assigned to liaison duties there, with the Russian Federation's short-sleeved, sun-bronzed Mediterranean Fleet, but far to the north with its Baltic Fleet. When he had stepped off the plane at naval headquarters in Kaliningrad, he didn't even have a winter coat. He assumed headquarters would assign him to one of the larger command ships, the *Kuznetsov*, or perhaps the battle cruiser *Pyotr Velikiy*. Instead, he found himself aboard the corvette *Rezkiy*, which rolled incessantly. Farshad found himself mildly seasick aboard this fast little tin can of a ship with its thin sides.

Dong, dong, dong—

He gave up and switched on the light.

His bed was cantilevered to the bulkhead of his cabin, which was so small that he couldn't open his door until he stowed the bed, and he couldn't stow the bed until he stripped it of its wool blanket, sheets, and pillow. This multistep process of putting away his bed, to open his door, to leave his cabin, was one of the myriad humbling routines that composed his life as a relatively junior liaison officer. Another was taking his meals in the cramped

wardroom among his fellow officers, few of whom spoke anything but Russian and all of whom were at least a decade younger. This had caused Farshad to eat mostly between meals, or to eat midrats, which were the day's leftovers placed out at around midnight by the messmen.

Over his pajamas he shrugged on his peacoat, a gift from a kindly supply orderly in Kaliningrad. The incessant noise of the ice floes banging off the hull kept him company as he padded down the red-lit passageway, staggering between the ship's steel bulkheads, toward the wardroom where he hoped to scrounge a bite to eat.

Like Farshad's room, the wardroom was an exercise in spacial economy. It was no more than a two-table banquette with a small galley attached. Sitting at the banquette was Lieutenant Commander Vasily Kolchak, the *Rezkiy's* executive officer. He was nursing a cup of tea tapped from the wardroom's samovar. A cigarette receded toward his knuckles as he read from a laptop. Behind him was the room's only adornment, an aquarium populated by yellow-orange fish who poked their eyes from a novelty shipwreck at its bottom. The messmen had already laid out the midrats in two stainless-steel vats, one filled with a dark-colored meat in a brown sauce and the other filled with a light-colored meat in a white sauce. A placard sat next to each dish, but Farshad couldn't read Russian.

“The white one is fish, some type of herring, I think,” said Kolchak in English, glancing up from his laptop. “The dark one is pork.”

Farshad paused for a moment, hovering over the two options. Then he sat across from Kolchak with an empty plate.

“Good choice,” said Kolchak. The only other sound was the aquarium filter running in the corner. He wore a gold signet ring on his right pinkie. With his left hand he played nervously with the blond, almost snow-white hair that brushed the tops of his ears. His small, shrewd eyes were cold and blue, their color slightly faded like two precious stones that had been cut generations ago. His nose was long, sharply pointed, and red on its tip; it seemed as though Kolchak was battling a cold. “I don't imagine you've seen the news,” he said to Farshad. Kolchak's English accent sounded faintly

British and old-worldly, as if Farshad were eavesdropping on the conversational mores of a previous century.

Kolchak clicked on a video from his laptop. The two of them listened to an address made a couple of hours before by the American president. When the video cut out, neither of them spoke. Finally Kolchak asked Farshad about his missing fingers.

“Fighting the Americans,” he explained. Farshad then pointed to Kolchak's signet ring, which at a closer inspection he could see was adorned with a two-headed eagle. “And your ring?”

“It was my great-great-grandfather's. He was also a naval officer, the Imperial Navy.” Kolchak took a long drag on his cigarette. “He fought in our war with Japan. Then the Bolsheviks killed him when he was an old man. This ring remained hidden in my family for many years. I'm the first to wear it openly since him. Time changes everything.”

“What do you think the Americans will do?” asked Farshad.

“I should ask you,” answered Kolchak. “You've fought against them before.”

This slight gesture of deference caught Farshad off guard. How long had it been since someone had sought out his opinion? Farshad couldn't help it; he felt a certain measure of affection for Kolchak, who, like him, was the loyal son of a nation that had not always treated him or his family fairly. Farshad answered Kolchak by saying that American presidents had a mixed history when it came to the enforcement of self-imposed “red lines.” He wondered if the United States would be willing to resort to nuclear weapons—even tactical nuclear weapons, as the president had suggested in her remarks—to prevent the Chinese from annexing Taiwan. “The United States was once predictable; not so much anymore,” concluded Farshad. “Their unpredictability makes them very dangerous. What will Russia do if the United States acts? Your leaders have a great deal to lose. Everywhere I look I see wealthy Russians.”

Catch Every Chapter in This Series

Sign up to automatically receive all six installments of 2034 in your inbox.
Your email

Will be used in accordance with our [Privacy Policy](#).

“Wealthy Russians?” Kolchak laughed. “There is no such thing.”

Farshad didn't understand. He mentioned their ubiquitous mega yachts in the Mediterranean and Black Seas, their ostentatious villas on the Amalfi and Dalmatian coasts. Whenever Farshad traveled abroad and he saw some resplendent thing—a villa, a boat, a private jet idling on the tarmac, or a woman bejeweled beyond measure—and he asked to whom it all belonged, the inevitable response was always some Russian.

Kolchak was shaking his head. “No, no, no,” he said. “There are no wealthy Russians.” He stubbed his cigarette out in the ashtray. “There are only poor Russians with money.”

While lighting another cigarette, Kolchak began to pontificate about the Rodina, his “Mother Russia,” how in its many iterations, whether they be tsarist, imperialist, or communist, it had never enjoyed the legitimacy of other world powers. “During the empire our tsars spoke French at court,” said Kolchak. “During communism our economy was a hollow shell. Today, under the federation, our leaders are viewed as criminals by the rest of the world. In New York City, or in London, they don't respect any of us, not even President Putin. To them, President Putin isn't the grandfather of our federation; no, to them he is simply another poor Russian, a gangster at best, even though he has retaken our ancestral territories in Crimea, Georgia, and Greater Ukraine; even though he has crippled America's political system, so that now their president doesn't even have a party but has to run as one of these enfeebled ‘independents.’ We are a cunning people. Our leader is one of us and is equally cunning. You asked what Russia will do if the United States acts? Isn't it obvious? What does the fox do in the henhouse?”

Kolchak's lips peeled back from his teeth in a smile.

Farshad had always understood, or at least understood intellectually, that his country and Russia had many shared interests. But with Kolchak, he began

to understand the depth of their kinship, the degree by which their two nations had developed in tandem, sharing a trajectory. Both had imperial and ancient pasts: the Russian tsars, the Persian shahs. Both had endured revolutions: the Bolsheviks, the Islamists. And both had suffered the antipathies of the West: economic sanctions, international censure. Farshad also understood, or at least intuited, the opportunity now presenting itself to his Russian allies.

They had left their home port of Kaliningrad three weeks before. On the first week of their journey, the *Rezkiy* had tracked numerous ships from the US Third and Sixth Fleets, which aggressively patrolled the western Atlantic and these northern Baltic waters. And then, quite suddenly, their American antagonists had vanished. After the dual catastrophes in the South China Sea, the destination of the American fleet became obvious. Equally obvious was the opportunity presented by its absence. No fewer than five hundred fiber-optic cables, which accounted for 90 percent of North America's 10G internet access, crisscrossed these icy depths.

“If the Americans detonate a nuclear weapon,” said Kolchak, “I don't think the world will much care if we tamper with a few undersea cables.” He held Farshad in his gaze. “I also don't think the world would say much if our troops seized a sliver of Poland, to unite Kaliningrad to the Russian mainland.” Kolchak pointed to a map on the wall. He traced out a corridor with his finger, which would give Russia direct overland access to its one Baltic port. Putin himself had often spoken about reclaiming this strip of land. “If the Americans detonate a nuclear weapon, they will become the pariah state they have always claimed we are.”

“Do you think they'd ever go through with it?” Farshad asked Kolchak.

“Ten or even fifteen years ago, I would have said no. Today, I am not so sure. The America they believe themselves to be is no longer the America that they are. Time changes everything, doesn't it. And now, it is changing the world's balance in our favor.” Kolchak checked his watch. He shut his laptop and glanced up at Farshad. “But it is late. You must get some rest.”

“I can't sleep,” said Farshad.

“How come?”

Farshad allowed the quiet to settle between them, so that Kolchak could perceive the faint *dong, dong, dong* of the ice floes glancing against the hull of the ship. “I find that sound unnerving,” Farshad admitted. “And the ship constantly rolls.”

Kolchak reached across the table and grasped Farshad affectionately by the arm. “You mustn't let either bother you. Go back to your room, lie down. The rolling you will get used to. And the noise? It has always helped me to imagine that the noise is something else.”

“Like what?” Farshad asked skeptically.

Dong, dong, a couple more ice floes glanced against the hull.

“Like a bell, tolling out a change in the time.”

23:47 MAY 22, 2034 (GMT+8)
SOUTH CHINA SEA

A knock on his door.

Middle of the night.

Lin Bao groaned as he sat up. What can it be now? he wondered. Such interruptions to his sleep had become routine. Last night, the commanders of two destroyers in his battle group had a dispute as to their order in formation, which Lin Bao had to resolve; the night before that there had been an unexpected weather advisory, a typhoon that thankfully never materialized; then a missed communications window with one of his submarines; before that an excess of hard-water moisture in one of his ship's reactors. The list blurred in his sleep-deprived mind. If Lin Bao stood on the cusp of a great moment in his nation's history, it didn't feel that way. Lin Bao felt consumed by the minutiae of his command, and convinced that he might never again enjoy a full night's rest.

He did, however, feel a small surge of satisfaction that the complex mix of cyber cloaking, stealth materials, and satellite spoofing had kept his fleet

well hidden. While the Americans surely suspected them of heading for the vicinity of Chinese Taipei, their old adversary had been unable to develop the precise targeting data required for a countermaneuver. Eventually, the Americans would find them. But by then it would be too late.

“Comrade Admiral, your presence is requested in the combat information center.”

Lin Bao awoke to another knock. “Comrade Admiral—”

Lin Bao flung open his door. “I heard you the first time,” he snapped at the young sailor, who couldn't have been more than 19 and who looked as sleep-deprived as the admiral. “Tell them”—he coughed—“tell them I'm coming.” The sailor nodded once and hurried down the corridor. As he dressed, Lin Bao regretted his outburst. It was a manifestation of the strain he was under. To exhibit that strain to his crew was to exhibit his weakness to them, and they were under a similar strain. For the past three weeks, ever since they had gone dark, the *Zheng He* Carrier Battle Group—along with the Navy's three other strike groups, elements of special forces from the People's Army, strategic land-based bombers, and hypersonic missiles from the air force—had all converged in a noose around Chinese Taipei, or Taiwan, as the West insisted on calling it. Although Lin Bao's command remained cloaked, he could almost feel the massive American global surveillance network groping for his precise location.

The operation, as designed by Minister Chiang and approved by the Politburo Standing Committee, was playing out in two phases, each of which adhered to one of Sun Tzu's famous axioms, the first being, *Let your plans be dark and impenetrable as night, and when you move, fall like a thunderbolt*. As dramatically as the Chinese fleet had vanished, it would soon reappear around Taiwan, moving like that proverbial thunderbolt. Never before had a nation concentrated its military strength with such stealth. It would take weeks, or even as much as a month, for the Americans or any other power to position combat assets to counter it. The second phase of Minister Chiang's plan was likewise based on Sun Tzu: *The supreme art of war is to subdue your enemy without fighting*. Minister Chiang believed that the sudden revelation of his forces off the coast would present the Legislative Yuan, the governing body of so-called Taiwan, with only one

choice: a vote of dissolution followed by annexation into the People's Republic. Not a single shot would need to be fired. When Minister Chiang had proposed his plan to the Politburo Standing Committee, he had argued that surrounding Taiwan so suddenly would result in a bloodless checkmate. Although skepticism existed among certain committee members, including Zhao Leji, the much-feared octogenarian secretary of the Central Commission for Discipline Inspection, ultimately the majority placed its confidence in Minister Chiang.

Lin Bao entered the combat information center and found Minister Chiang waiting for him via secure video teleconference. “Comrade Minister,” Lin Bao began, “it is good to see you.” When the *Zheng He* had gone dark, the two had continued to email, but because of security concerns they hadn't spoken. Upon seeing each other again there was an embarrassed silence, as if each were taking a measure of the other's strain.

“It is good to see you too,” began Minister Chiang, who then proceeded to laud Lin Bao and his crew on their exceptional conduct, not only in maneuvering the *Zheng He* Carrier Battle Group into position—a complex task to be sure—but also for repairing their ship while underway, so that it stood poised to achieve a great victory. On and on the minister went. The more congratulations he heaped on the crew of the *Zheng He*, the more it unsettled Lin Bao.

Something was wrong.

“Late last night, the Legislative Yuan scheduled an emergency session,” said Minister Chiang. “I expect a vote for dissolution in the coming days ... ” His voice began to peter out, to choke even. “Our plan seems to be coming together ... ” He pinched the bridge of his nose and squeezed his eyes shut. He took a long, heavy breath, and then, in a more defeated tone, he added, “However, there is a concern. The Americans have threatened a nuclear strike—no doubt you've heard.”

Lin Bao hadn't heard. He shot a glance at one of his intelligence analysts, who sat an arm's length away. For the last twelve hours they'd been in a communications blackout. The young sailor immediately pulled up the *New York Times* home page on an unclassified laptop. The headline was in the

largest, boldest font: “WITH RED LINE DRAWN, NUCLEAR WEAPONS AN OPTION, SAYS PRESIDENT.” The story had been filed several hours earlier.

Lin Bao wasn't certain how to respond to Minister Chiang. All he could think to do was provide the latest disposition of the *Zheng He* Carrier Battle Group, so he began talking mechanically. He reviewed the readiness of his flight crews, the placement of his surface escorts, the arrangements of his assigned submarines. On and on he went. But as he covered these technical details, Minister Chiang began to nervously bite his fingernails. He stared at his hands. He hardly seemed to listen.

Then Lin Bao blurted out, “Our plan remains a good one, Comrade Minister.”

Minister Chiang glanced up at him and said nothing.

Lin Bao continued, “If the Legislative Yuan votes to dissolve, the Americans can't launch a strike against us. They aren't brazen enough to attack us for a vote taken by someone else.”

Minister Chiang stroked his round chin. “Perhaps,” he said.

“And if they did strike, they can't attack our fleet. They don't have precise positional data, even for a tactical nuclear strike. Also, we're only a few miles off the coast of Taipei—the collateral damage to the ports would prove catastrophic. That is the genius of your plan, Comrade Minister. We subdue the enemy without ever fighting. As Sun Tzu said, it's ‘*the supreme art of war*.’”

Minister Chiang nodded and repeated, “Perhaps.” His voice was thin, as if he needed a drink of water. Then their video teleconference was over. The Legislative Yuan had a vote to take. The Americans had drawn a red line, one that they might or might not enforce. There was little for Lin Bao and his crew to do, except to wait. It was now early morning. On his way back to his cabin, Lin Bao checked the bridge watch. His crew, despite their youth and inexperience, executed their duties vigilantly. Each understood the enterprise they were embarked upon. In the near distance was the Taiwanese

coast, shrouded in a predawn fog. Their fleet was also concealed in this fog. The sun would soon rise, and that fog would burn away. The island would reveal itself and so, too, would they. But Lin Bao was tired. He needed to get some rest.

He returned to his quarters and attempted but failed to sleep. Eventually, he tried reading. He scanned his bookshelf and saw his copy of *The Art of War*, which, ironically, he'd first read at the US Naval War College in Newport. As he browsed the well-annotated pages, he thought of the fog in Newport, the way it clung to the coast, its consistency, how a ship sliced through it, and how it reminded him of the fog here. He then came to a passage, one he'd read many times before but seemed to have forgotten in the intervening years: *If you know the enemy and know yourself, you need not fear the result of a hundred battles. If you know yourself but not the enemy, for every victory gained you will also suffer a defeat. If you know neither the enemy nor yourself, you will succumb in every battle.*

Lin Bao shut his eyes.

Did he know his enemy? He tried to remember everything he could of America. He thought of his years studying there, living there, and of his mother, that other half of him who was born there. When he shut his eyes, he could hear her voice, how she used to sing to him as a child. Her songs ... American songs. He hummed one unevenly to himself, "The Dock of the Bay"; its rhythm, he knew it so well. At last he fell into a deep and peaceful sleep.

21:37 MAY 21, 2034 (GMT-4)
WASHINGTON, D.C.

The morning before it was delivered, a copy of the president's Oval Office address had been circulated widely and thoroughly staffed. It had traveled through the interagency coordination process—State, Defense, Homeland Security, even Treasury had all weighed in with their comments. The press secretary, senior political advisors, and select members of the national security staff, including Chowdhury, had been privy to the rehearsals, which had taken place with the president sitting behind the Resolute Desk. Chowdhury thought she looked good, very composed, steady.

That evening, when it came time for her to deliver her remarks, Chowdhury was sitting at his desk while his colleagues gathered around one or another of the ubiquitous televisions that littered the cramped West Wing. Chowdhury wasn't watching; after the many rehearsals he hadn't felt the need to. It was only when he heard a collective murmur that he glanced up. Neither he nor any of his colleagues had known that the president planned to announce the authorization of a potential nuclear strike. Before they had a chance to do anything except to stare dumbfounded at the television, the door to the Oval Office swung open. A handful of cabinet officials strode past. Based on their demeanor—the blank looks, the tight whispers—they were caught off guard too. The only two who appeared unfazed were Hendrickson and Wisecarver. Wisecarver beckoned Chowdhury into his office, which in the previous week had been moved kitty-corner to the president's own.

“C'mon in,” said Wisecarver, as he waved Chowdhury through the door. “We can get this done with a five-minute stand-up.” Wisecarver's office was a chaos of neglect. A framed grade-school portrait of the son he'd lost sat next to his keyboard, but this was the only personal object amid the binders and folders that piled his desk and every shelf, one open on top of another. Each cover sheet contained an alphabet soup of classification codes. He began to stack documents one by one in either Chowdhury's or Hendrickson's outstretched hands, depending on whether the action needed to originate from the executive branch or Department of Defense. Wisecarver, a master in the language of bureaucracy, talked his subordinates through their paper chase with a practiced enthusiasm. Each minor task Wisecarver assigned to Hendrickson and Chowdhury took the country one step closer to a nuclear war.

Before Chowdhury could ask a question of his boss, the five minutes were up.

The door shut. Both he and Hendrickson stood out front of Wisecarver's office with a stack of binders in their hands. “Did you know ahead of time about the speech?” Chowdhury asked.

“Does it matter?”

Chowdhury wasn't certain that it did matter. He also thought this was Hendrickson's way of telling him that, yes, in fact he had known about the changes. He'd been the senior official from Defense in the room, so it made sense that he would have known. It also made sense that this knowledge would've stayed within a tight circle, one that excluded much of the cabinet and nearly all of the White House staff. Nevertheless, it felt like a deception to Chowdhury. Which is to say, it didn't feel right. But then again, he thought, how else should a decision authorizing such a use of force feel?

“There's no way we'll follow through with it,” said Chowdhury. But as he said this, he wasn't certain whether he was asking a question or making a statement. Although Chowdhury had been kept in the dark about the president's plan to draw a nuclear red line, he'd been kept in the dark about little else. For instance, he knew the latest disposition of Chinese forces near Taiwan; the noose they had drawn around the island was a combination of their navy, their land- and air-based missiles, along with a contingent of their special forces that could conduct a limited invasion. To stealthily execute this high-speed encirclement, they had used an impressive and still-mysterious combination of technologies. China's naval forces now hugged the Taiwanese coast, and given the danger of collateral damage, what, if anything, could an American tactical nuclear strike target?

This excerpt appears in the February 2021 issue. [Subscribe to WIRED.](#)

Illustration: Owen Freeman

“They've just got to believe we'll do it,” said Hendrickson. “Right now, three of our carrier strike groups have orders in hand to transit the South China Sea. We need time. If we can get those ships on station, we can threaten the Chinese mainland. Then they'll have to pull resources away from Taiwan. A credible nuclear threat buys us time.”

“It's also risky as hell.”

Hendrickson shrugged; he didn't disagree. He began to gather his things, locking the binders and folders in a classified courier bag. He needed to return to the Pentagon. Chowdhury offered to walk out with him. He'd likely spend all night at the office and so wanted to get some fresh air. “I saw your

friend Hunt got command of the *Enterprise* Strike Group,” mentioned Chowdhury in an effort at small talk. The two stood outside the West Wing, a few steps from the last Secret Service checkpoint. Above them the sky was clear and thick with stars.

“Yeah,” said Hendrickson, who was looking away from Chowdhury, across the street toward Lafayette Park. “I saw that too.”

“Well,” said Chowdhury, “good for her.” He was smiling.

“Is it good for her?” asked Hendrickson. He didn't return Chowdhury's smile. He only stood there, alternating his gaze between the park and the clear night sky. It was as if he couldn't quite bring himself to take either a step forward or one backward. “If we do launch—because the Taiwanese cave, or because the Chinese misstep, or because Wisecarver gets his way—it's most likely Sarah who will have to pull the trigger.”

This hadn't occurred to Chowdhury.

When Hendrickson tried to step out onto Pennsylvania Avenue, the Secret Service held him back a moment. The Metro Police were responding to an incident inside Lafayette Park, where an old man with a tattered beard was screaming frantically about the “End of Days.” He had emerged only a few minutes before from a small, dirty plastic tent. With a smartphone clutched in his hand, he was listening to a streaming news channel, the volume turned all the way up. Chowdhury recognized the man as he scrambled past. He was part of the so-called White House Peace Vigil, which had protested continually against all war, but particularly nuclear war, since 1981. As the police descended upon the man, he grew more frenzied, tearing at his clothes and hurling himself at the gates of the White House. While Chowdhury waited for the Metro Police to make their arrest, he heard one of the Secret Service agents on the other side of the gates mutter, “Old loon ...”

The next morning, when Chowdhury opened the news on his tablet's browser, he clicked on a brief story in the metro section dedicated to the incident. The old man had been released without bail but charged, nevertheless, with a single count of disturbing the peace.

Chowdhury closed the browser; he placed his tablet on the table.

To read another word felt futile.

10:27 JUNE 18, 2034 (GMT+8)

20 NAUTICAL MILES OFF THE COAST OF TAIPEI

Water sluiced through the creases of Lin Bao's raincoat as he stood on the flight deck. On a clear day he would've been able to see the gleaming skyline in the distance. Now all he could see were the storm clouds that shrouded the city. Minister Chiang was scheduled to land any minute. The purpose of his visit wasn't entirely clear; however, Lin Bao felt certain that the time had come to resolve their current stalemate with the Americans and the Taiwanese. The resolution to that stalemate was the news Lin Bao believed the minister would bring.

Flickering in the distance, Lin Bao made out a dim oscillating light.

Minister Chiang's plane.

Pitching and yawing, it catapulted out of a rent in the clouds. Seconds later it was reeling on the deck, the pilots having perfectly caught the three-wire, much to Lin Bao's satisfaction. The engines whined in reverse, decelerating. After a few moments, the back ramp dropped and Minister Chiang emerged, his round face laughing and smiling at the exhilaration of a carrier landing. One of the pilots helped the minister remove his cranial helmet, which caught on his large ears. The minister's visit hadn't been announced, but like a politician he began distributing handshakes to the ground crew, who eventually surmised who he was. Before any fuss could be made on account of his arrival Lin Bao escorted him off the flight deck.

Inside Lin Bao's stateroom, the two sat at a small banquette scattered with nautical charts. A holographic map of Taiwan was projected over the table, rotating on its axis. An orderly poured them cups of tea and then stood at attention with his back to the bulkhead, his chest arching upward. Minister Chiang gave the orderly a long, interrogatory look. Lin Bao dismissed him with a slight backhanded wave.

Now it was only the two of them.

Minister Chiang slouched a bit deeper into his seat. “We find ourselves at an impasse with our adversaries ...” he began.

Lin Bao nodded.

“I had hoped the Legislative Yuan would vote to dissolve, so we might avoid an opposed invasion. That seems increasingly unlikely.” Minister Chiang took a sip from his tea, and then asked, “Why do you think the Americans threatened us with a nuclear strike?”

Lin Bao didn't quite understand the question; its answer seemed too obvious. “To intimidate us, Comrade Minister.”

“Hmm,” said Minister Chiang. “Tell me, does it intimidate you?”

Lin Bao didn't answer, which seemed to disappoint Minister Chiang.

“Well, it shouldn't,” he told his subordinate. According to the minister, the American threat of a nuclear strike didn't show their strength. Quite the opposite. It revealed how vulnerable they were. If the Americans had really wanted to threaten the Chinese, they would've launched a massive cyberattack. The only problem was they couldn't—they lacked the capability to hack into China's online infrastructure. The deregulation that had resulted in so much American innovation and economic strength was now an American weakness. Its disaggregated online infrastructure was vulnerable in a way that the Chinese infrastructure was not. “The Americans have proven incapable of organizing a centralized cyber defense,” said Minister Chiang. “Whereas we can shut down much of their country's electric grid with a single keystroke. Their threat of nuclear retaliation is outdated and absurd, like slapping someone across the face with your glove before challenging them to a duel. It's time we show them what we think of their threat.”

“How do we do that?” asked Lin Bao, as he clicked a remote that turned off the rotating hologram. He cleared away their cups of tea so as to reveal the

nautical charts that covered the banquet table, as if the two might discuss a naval maneuver.

“It's nothing we do here,” answered Minister Chiang, disregarding the charts. “We'll handle it up north, in the Barents Sea. The American Third and Sixth Fleets have left those waters to transit south. With the American fleets gone, our Russian allies have unfettered access to the subsurface 10G internet cables that service the United States. Our allies will help us to, gently, remind the Americans that their power is outdated, that bombs aren't the only way to cripple a nation—not even the best way. What I need you to do is simple: Be ready. This will be a cyber show of force. It will be limited; we'll only cut a cable or two. We'll dip the Americans into darkness, allow them to stare into that void. Afterward, either the Legislative Yuan will invite us into Taipei, or we will go of our own accord. Either way, your command must be ready.”

“Is that what you came all this way to tell me?”

“I didn't come to tell you anything,” said Minister Chiang. “I came because I wanted to stand on this ship and see if you are, in fact, ready.”

Lin Bao could feel the minister's gaze boring into him. In the days ahead he understood how much would depend on his command's ability to act quickly, whether through an unopposed landing in Taipei, or alternatively a ship-to-shore assault. Before Minister Chiang could deliver his verdict as to the perceived readiness of Lin Bao and his command, there was a knock at the door, a dispatch from the combat information center.

Lin Bao read the note.

“What does it say?” asked Minister Chiang.

“The *Enterprise* is on the move.”

“Coming here?”

“No,” answered Lin Bao. “It doesn't make sense. They're sailing away.”

11:19 JUNE 18, 2034 (GMT+8)

220 NAUTICAL MILES OFF THE COAST OF ZHANJIANG

These waters were a graveyard. As the *Enterprise* set its course, Sarah Hunt knew the countless wrecks she sailed over. The Philippines were to her east. To her west was the Gulf of Tonkin. She considered the names of the ships—the USS *Princeton*, *Yorktown*, the *Hoel*, and the *Gambier Bay*—whose blasted hulls rested on the seabed beneath her. And Japanese ships as well, battleships and carriers. Hunt and her crew passed silently above them, taking up a position—for what?

Hunt didn't know.

Her orders had come in quick succession. Every couple of hours she was summoned to the radio room, an antiquated closet in the bowels of the ship that a senior chief, who everyone called Quint, treated as his own personal fiefdom. The nickname Quint came from his uncanny resemblance to the captain of the ill-fated *Orca* played by Robert Shaw in the film *Jaws*. Working alongside Quint was his assistant, a young petty officer third class who the crew of the *Enterprise* called Hooper, not because he looked like Richard Dreyfuss' character, Matt Hooper—the intrepid, bespectacled, Great White-hunting marine biologist—but simply because he spent every waking hour with Quint.

Hunt, who had spent a career receiving her orders over lengthy briefings via secure video teleconference, accompanied by kaleidoscopic displays of PowerPoint, was slowly getting used to this fragmented manner of communications. With their Chinese adversaries having the upper hand in cyber, the *Enterprise* had gone into an internet blackout. Indo-Pacific Command, which was in direct contact with the White House, kept tapping out these minimalist communications to Hunt in high-frequency radio bursts, the same long-range bandwidth employed by the US Navy in the Second World War.

Another of these messages had arrived, so Hunt traveled four levels down from her stateroom to the radio room, where she found Quint and Hooper surrounded by a tangle of electronics, the former with a pair of spectacles perched on the tip of his nose as he unsnarled some wires and the latter holding a smoking soldering iron.

“Gentlemen,” said Hunt, announcing herself.

Hooper startled at her voice while Quint sat frozen with his chin tucked down as though calculating his share of the bill at a restaurant. Undisturbed, he continued to focus through his spectacles as his hands worked swiftly at the tangle of wires leading into the radio. “Mornin', ma'am,” said Quint. An unlit cigarette dangled from his mouth.

“It's evening, Senior Chief.”

Quint raised an eyebrow but didn't take his concentration away from the wires. “Then evenin', ma'am.” He nodded for Hooper to pass him the soldering iron, which he quickly applied to a connection he was grafting onto a circuit board. For the past two weeks, ever since they got underway, Quint and Hooper had been retrofitting a suite of antiquated VHF, UHF, and HF radios into the avionics of the single F/A-18 Hornet squadron aboard the *Enterprise*. This made the Death Rattlers the only squadron that would be entirely immune to cyber interference. At least that was the plan.

“How many of those have you got left to install?” she asked.

“None,” said Quint. “We finished the last Hornet this morning. This is an upgrade to our ship's HF receiver.” Quint drew silent for a moment, mustering his concentration. “There,” he said, a ribbon of smoke unspooling from the soldering iron as he handed it back to Hooper. Quint then screwed on the front panel of the radio they'd been tampering with. They powered it on. Its receiver was hooked to a speaker, which emitted a warbling sound.

“Can you turn that down?” asked Hunt.

Hooper glanced at Quint, who nodded, but kept his head canted slightly to the side, his one ear raised, like a maestro fine-tuning his instrument. While Hooper manipulated the dial, Quint gestured alternately with his left hand or his right as they cycled up or down the frequency ladder, searching for ... what? Hunt couldn't say. Then, as if perceiving her curiosity, Quint began to explain himself.

“We're searching for long-delayed echoes, ma'am. LDEs. When you transmit an HF frequency, it loops around the earth until it finds a receiver. On rare occasions, that can take a while and you wind up with an echo.”

“How long of an echo?” asked Hunt.

“Usually, only a few seconds,” said Quint.

“We picked up some yesterday,” added Hooper.

Hunt smiled at him. “What's the longest echo you ever heard of?”

While Hooper manipulated the dial, Quint made a gesture with his right hand, as though encouraging a piece of music. He was both speaking to Hunt and listening to the oscillations in frequency. “Old salts I served with said that in these waters they'd picked up conversations from fifty or even seventy-five years ago,” explained Quint. With a wide grin that revealed decades of the Navy's shoddy dental work, he added, “There's lots of ghosts out here, ma'am. You just got to listen for 'em.”

Hunt didn't return Quint's smile; still, she couldn't help but imagine the possibility of ages-old conversations lingering in the surrounding atmosphere—the lost pilots searching the darkness for their carriers off the coast of North Vietnam, the frantic gun crews calling out flights of incoming Zeros in the Philippine Sea. However, she needed to turn to the task at hand.

Quint reached across his desk to a piece of paper with the message he'd recently decoded from Indo-Pacific Command. “They aren't giving you much to go off of, huh?” he said.

The message was hardly a message, simply four latitudinal and longitudinal coordinates, so a box. There was no mission statement, no situation update; Hunt would place the *Enterprise* and its escorts within this box and then await further instructions. She tucked the scrap of paper in the pocket of her coveralls. As she went to leave, Quint stopped her. “Ma'am,” he said, reaching onto a back shelf. “We fixed this up; thought you might be able to use it.” In his large grip was an old travel radio. “If you tune it just right, you can get the BBC World Service, even a bit of music, depending on where

we're at. The dial is a bit tricky. It takes some finesse. But it should do all right for you.”

Quint and Hooper were still playing around with the HF receiver as she left, Quint making motions with his hands, Hooper manipulating the dial. With the decoded message in her pocket, Hunt bounded up the four levels to her stateroom. She set the slip of paper with the coordinates on her desk, already layered with an assortment of nautical charts. With a set of parallel rulers, a divider, a compass, and a sharp pencil, she sketched out the corners of the box. It was tight, but large enough to fit her carrier strike group. It was to the south of their current position, another eighty nautical miles further off the coast, a three-hundred-mile straight line overwater to Zhanjiang, the headquarters of China's South Sea Fleet. With the crisis around Taiwan, she wondered how many of the South Sea Fleet's ships were currently in port.

It wouldn't be many.

But it would be enough.

Hunt set her pencil down on the chart. She turned on the radio and managed to find the BBC World Service. With her arms crossed and her legs stretched out in front of her, she closed her eyes and relaxed. She tried to imagine the news reports—*USS Enterprise strikes Chinese naval facility with tactical nuclear weapons*—but she couldn't; it seemed too improbable. Although few Cold War precepts had aged well in the twenty-first century, the logic of mutually assured destruction was one of them. Even so, thought Hunt, her country had little to gain by wiping out the port at Zhanjiang. As she prepared to alter the course of the *Enterprise*, she couldn't help but recognize this maneuver for the theater it was—for the theater such maneuvers always had been—ever since man split the atom, unleashed its power, and nations coerced one another with the threat of that power. The current crisis would de-escalate, as crises always did. She felt certain of this.

That certainty gave her some peace of mind, enough so she dozed off in her chair. She slept dreamlessly, waking an hour later. Her radio was no longer playing the BBC World Service. It had lost the signal. All it emitted was static. Hunt fiddled with the dial, trying to retune into the news.

Then she heard something.

A weak, indistinct voice.

As quickly as she heard it, it disappeared.

She left her radio tuned to the static, set on the same frequency, wondering if she might hear the strange transmission again. She knew what it was; Quint had told her.

It was ghosts.

14:22 JUNE 24, 2034 (GMT+2)
BARENTS SEA

This far north the sun held above them nearly twenty-four hours a day. The sky was clear, the weather unseasonably warm. The American fleet was nowhere to be found; it had sailed away. The Russian Federation owned these waters, and they knew it. Unencumbered by the looming threat of the US Navy, the crew of the *Rezkiy* and other ships of the flotilla indulged in bouts of recreation. On the battle cruiser *Pyotr Velikiy*, the crew descended its side boats to take plunges into the icy seawater. On the carrier *Kuznetsov*, the captain authorized sunbathing on the flight deck despite the cold. On the smaller *Rezkiy*, Kolchak allowed pop songs to play over the ship's intercom during the daily cleanup; most popular were classics like Elvis, the Jonas Brothers, and anything by Shakira. "Hips Don't Lie" was a favorite.

These little breaks with discipline, plus the general eccentricity of naval life, confounded Lieutenant Commander Farshad. His liaison duties consisted of little more than being a presence that evidenced two nations' faithfulness to one another, even though neither of those nations had ever been renowned for faithfulness to anything but themselves. Farshad had once said as much in the wardroom to Kolchak, who had asked in reply, "Has a nation ever been faithful to anything but itself?" Farshad had conceded the point.

Not long after this exchange, Farshad had been standing on the bridge of the *Rezkiy* when the watch spotted a school of sharks off the ship's port side. Kolchak had been manning that watch, and he took an uncanny interest in

the sharks, even adjusting their ship's course to follow them for several minutes. “Perfect,” said Kolchak as he stared at their thrashing dorsal fins. As if sensing Farshad's confusion, he explained himself. “Those sharks are heading in the direction of the 10G undersea cables. They're attracted to the electromagnetic energy. Those cables connect to the United States, and sharks have been known to chew through them. Their presence will give us deniability.”

Destroying a few of the undersea cables would send a powerful message to the Americans, slowing internet across the country by as much as 60 percent, or so Farshad had been told by Kolchak. This might be enough to de-escalate the crisis, to bring everyone to their senses. When it came to acting pragmatically, which was to say acting in their national interests, it seemed to Farshad that only his country—and perhaps the Russians—were capable of clear thinking. The Russians, like them, knew that any scenario that weakened the Americans was advantageous. In fact, a de-escalation of the current crisis wasn't really in the Iranian or Russian interest.

Disruption was in their interest.

Chaos.

A change in the world order.

The sharks disappeared beneath the waves, and for the remaining hours of the day the *Rezkiy* and its sister ships idled over the 10G cables. The mood on the ship turned businesslike. Farshad lingered on the bridge, where Kolchak and the captain kept a vigil, the two speaking exclusively in Russian, while Kolchak took the occasional break to explain the situation to Farshad.

“We'll circle around this area here,” Kolchak said, pushing a yellowing fingernail at their navigation computer's interface. “The *Pyotr Velikiy* has a tethered submersible aboard that is going to place an explosive cutting charge on the cables.”

“How large is the charge?” asked Farshad.

The captain brought his eyes out of his binoculars. From over his shoulder, he glanced at them warily.

“Just enough to do the job,” said Kolchak.

The captain made a face, and then a transmission came over the radio in Russian. Kolchak snatched the receiver and promptly replied while the captain dipped his eyes back into his binoculars and continued to scan the open sea. The *Pyotr Velikiy* was recovering its submersible, the charge having been set. Planted on the horizon was the *Kuznetsov*, its decks crowded with aircraft. Kolchak continued to check his watch, the second hand making its steady orbit around the dial as they waited.

More minutes passed in silence.

Then an explosion, a geyser fountaining upward from the seabed. Followed by a shock. And a sound, like a clap. The entire ship rattled. The water splashed back onto the surface of the ocean. Another radio transmission came into the bridge. The voice was excited, congratulatory. The captain answered the call in the same congratulatory manner. The only person on the bridge who didn't seem pleased by the result was Farshad, who was confused. Grasping Kolchak by the elbow, he said, “That must've destroyed more than one or two cables.”

The smile vanished from Kolchak's face. “Perhaps.”

“Perhaps?” answered Farshad. He could feel the old familiar rage brimming up from the center of his chest, into his limbs. He felt duped. “That explosion must have destroyed every cable.”

“And so what if it did?” answered Kolchak. “A de-escalation between Beijing and Washington hardly benefits us. It doesn't benefit your nation either. Let's see what happens now. The result of this disruption will be advantageous, for both of our countries. Who knows, then we might—” Before Kolchak could finish the thought, the ship's collision alarm sounded.

Orders were rapidly shouted across the bridge—a new heading, a new speed (“Reverse right rudder, full ahead left!”), a reflexive set of impact-avoidance

measures—while both Kolchak and Farshad scanned off the bow. At first, Farshad couldn't see the obstacle that threatened collision. There was no ship. No iceberg. No large object that assured catastrophe. There was only clear sky. And a mist of seawater that still lingered in the air after the explosion.

It was the mist that concealed the obstacle.

Sharks, dozens of them, an entire school, bobbing upward like so many apples in a barrel, their white bellies presented to the sun. The evasive maneuvers continued. Farshad could do nothing; a sailor in name only, he couldn't help the crew avoid the collision. The *Rezkiy* plowed through the field of dead fish, their bodies hitting the thin hull, reminding Farshad of the ice floes that had so often kept him awake at night—*dong, dong, dong*. Then a far sharper noise combined with this hollow thudding, a noise like a fistful of metal spoons tossed down a garbage disposal; the shark carcasses were passing through the twin propellers of the *Rezkiy*.

Farshad followed Kolchak out to the bridge wing. They turned to the stern of the ship to assess the damage. The seawater mist still lingered in the air. The sunlight passed through it, casting off brilliant rainbows—blues, yellows, oranges, reds.

So much red.

Farshad realized the red wasn't only in the air; it was also in the water. The slightly damaged *Rezkiy* set a new course, leaving a wide swath of blood in its wake.

21:02 JUNE 26, 2034 (GMT+8)

300 NAUTICAL MILES OFF THE COAST OF ZHANJIANG

The internet was out across the entire eastern seaboard. Eighty percent of the connectivity in the Midwest was gone. Connectivity on the West Coast had been reduced by 50 percent.

A nationwide power outage.

The airports closed.

The markets panicked.

Hunt listened to the updates arriving via the BBC World Service on the handheld radio Quint had given her. She immediately understood the implications. She scrambled down four levels to the radio room, where Quint was also listening to the news and awaiting her.

“Anything yet?” she asked.

“Nothing,” he said.

Hooper wasn't there, he was asleep in the berthing, and Hunt was glad it was only her and the old chief. She knew the message she was waiting for, and she felt as though she wanted the fewest people possible around when it arrived. The idea of receiving her task in front of someone from a younger generation, like Hooper, felt particularly difficult. Perhaps this was because he would have to live with the consequences longer than any of them. This was Hunt's train of thought as she sat in the cramped radio room with Quint, the two of them listening to static on the HF radio set, waiting.

And then the message arrived.

10:47 JUNE 26, 2034 (GMT-4)
WASHINGTON, D.C.

Chowdhury wasn't in the room when they made the decision. To assuage his guilt about what followed, he would always cling to that fact. In the years to come he would have ample opportunity to imagine the discussion around the Situation Room conference table beneath the dim generator-powered lights. He would imagine the positions taken by Trent Wisecarver, by the various service chiefs and cabinet secretaries, the tabulations of arguments *for* or *against* what they were about to do—what they had all committed themselves to do when the president had put down her “red line” and dared her counterparts in Beijing to cross it.

Which was what it seemed Beijing had now done, though not in the way anyone had anticipated. The cutting of the undersea cables and the resulting plunge into darkness was the demonstrable fact that, when discussed around

the conference table, proved Beijing had crossed the red line. The question was the response. And even that was settled in remarkably short order. Chowdhury envisioned the scene—a disquisition of US interests by Wisecarver, followed by a range of options (or lack thereof) presented by the Joint Chiefs, and then formal nuclear authorizations being granted by the president herself. Chowdhury didn't need to imagine any more than that, because he had seen the principals as they exited into the West Wing, their dour expressions failing to contain the knowledge of the decision they had settled upon, even though they themselves didn't yet understand past intellectualization the destruction they would unleash. How could they?

With the orders dispatched, Wisecarver set up a duty rotation among the national security staff and Chowdhury was sent home, to return the following morning. He expected the strike to occur sometime in the night. There would, of course, be a response from Beijing. And the national security staff needed to be ready for it. On Chowdhury's drive home, entire blocks were still without power. Only about half the traffic lights in the city worked; the other half were blacked out or shuffling their colors nonsensically onto empty streets. In only a few more days, the trash would begin to pile up. When he tuned in to his favorite radio station he was met with static.

So he drove in silence.

And he thought.

He thought the same thought all through that night—as he ate dinner with his mother and Ashni, as he carried the girl up to bed with her arms looped heavily around his neck like two ropes, and as he wished his mother good night in the guest room and she kissed him, uncharacteristically, on the forehead and then touched his cheek with her cupped palm as she hadn't done in years, not since his divorce. The thought was this: *I have to get my family somewhere safe.*

Chowdhury knew where that place was. It wasn't a bomb shelter (if those even existed anymore) or outside of the city (although that wouldn't be a bad start). No, he concluded; none of that would be enough.

He knew what he needed to do.

Who he needed to call.

In the quiet of his home, with his mother and daughter sleeping so near he would need to speak in a whisper, he picked up his phone and dialed. The answer came after the first ring.

“Admiral Anand Patel speaking. ”

Chowdhury froze. A beat of silence followed.

“Hello? Hello?”

“Hello, Uncle. It's me, Sandeep.”

13:36 JUNE 27, 2034 (GMT+8)

300 NAUTICAL MILES OFF THE COAST OF ZHANJIANG

White light on the horizon.

That's how Sarah Hunt would always remember it.

11:15 JUNE 30, 2034 (GMT+8)

TAIWAN TAOYUAN INTERNATIONAL AIRPORT

Lin Bao believed he had known them, but he hadn't.

If he had once considered himself half American, he no longer thought so. Not after what they'd done at Zhanjiang three days ago. Every member of his crew knew someone who'd perished there, and almost all had family within the blast zone. Countless friends of his—from his academy days, to postings on other ships, to three cousins who had nothing to do with the Navy but who lived in that port city by the turquoise sea—each gone in an instant, in a flash. Others had not been so lucky. Lin Bao couldn't bear to linger on the details; they were too gruesome. But he knew the hospitals in Beihai, Maoming, Yangjiang, and even as far away as Shenzhen had already filled to capacity.

If the American strike on Zhanjiang had been swift and decisive, the invasion of Taiwan by the People's Army had proven its equal—though it wasn't Beijing's response to the 150-kiloton blast; that was yet to come. A discussion of that response was the reason Lin Bao was summoned away from his ship to a conference, so that he was now awaiting the arrival of Minister Chiang in the airport's international terminal, in what had once been the British Airways first-class lounge. Floor-to-ceiling windows allowed Lin Bao to marvel at his country's occupation of the island. Though the invasion had shut down the airport to civilian traffic, it was busy—if not busier—with military traffic, commuter jets having been replaced with fighters and transports, and vacationers and business travelers having been replaced with soldiers. When Minister Chiang at last arrived in the lounge, he was followed by a vast retinue of security, which, as he explained apologetically, was the reason for his delay. “They've become very protective of me,” he said, and laughed nervously, offering one of his characteristically expansive smiles to his security detail, none of whom returned it.

Minister Chiang escorted Lin Bao into a conference room, a clean glassed-in cube designed for executives to use between flights. The two sat next to each other at one end of a long table. Lin Bao couldn't help but notice Minister Chiang's uniform, which wasn't his usual service dress but rather a set of poorly fitting camouflage utilities that still held the creases from where they'd been folded in plastic packaging. Like Lin Bao, the minister couldn't help but steal the occasional admiring glance at his troops as they moved efficiently through the airport, dispersing throughout Taipei and then beyond for the seizure and annexation of this stubborn republic, finally brought to heel.

However, when Minister Chiang's attention returned to the conference room, his expression turned severe, and he began to knead his chin, as if the action were a way to coax his jaw into motion. Eventually, he spoke, “Our position is becoming increasingly precarious. We have a week, maybe two, until the Americans will have massed their fleets so close to our mainland that we'll no longer possess free access to the sea. Which is unacceptable. If we allow that to happen, the Americans will strangle us as we have done here, to this island. With our access to the sea blocked, our entire mainland will be under threat of invasion, to say nothing of the nuclear threat. The Americans have

crossed that threshold. Once a nation has dropped one nuclear weapon the stigma of a second or a third is less. The moment has come for us to settle on a course of action.”

Minister Chiang was speaking imperiously, which caused Lin Bao to hesitate before replying, “Is that the reason for this”—and Lin Bao struggled for a word to describe the nature of their meeting, which was ostensibly why Minister Chiang had summoned him here, away from his ship, to the British Airways lounge, which increasingly felt like a strange, even illicit location —“I mean, the reason for this *conference*?”

Minister Chiang leaned forward in his chair, placing his hand affectionately on Lin Bao's forearm. Then he glanced out the window, to his security detail, as if making sure his dark-suited entourage observed the gesture. And Lin Bao saw that they did. Gradually, he began to intuit the subtext for their meeting as Minister Chiang confessed that their “conference” was a “conference of two.” Yes, he could have invited the commander of the special forces task force, an unimaginative major general whose troops had already fanned out across Taipei, seizing strategic targets such as radio, television, and power stations, as well as gathering up probable agitators; and he could have also invited the commander of their air forces, a technocrat who was coordinating a vast logistical web of resupply while keeping his fighter and attack aircraft poised for any counterstrike; but to invite either of them would have disrupted their efforts. Also, Minister Chiang explained that he wasn't certain they possessed “the required competencies for what would come next.”

Which begged the question of what that *next* would be.

When Lin Bao asked, Minister Chiang grew uncharacteristically reticent. He crossed his arms over his chest, turned his chin slightly to the side, so that he was observing Lin Bao from the corners of his eyes as if to confirm that he had appraised him correctly from the start.

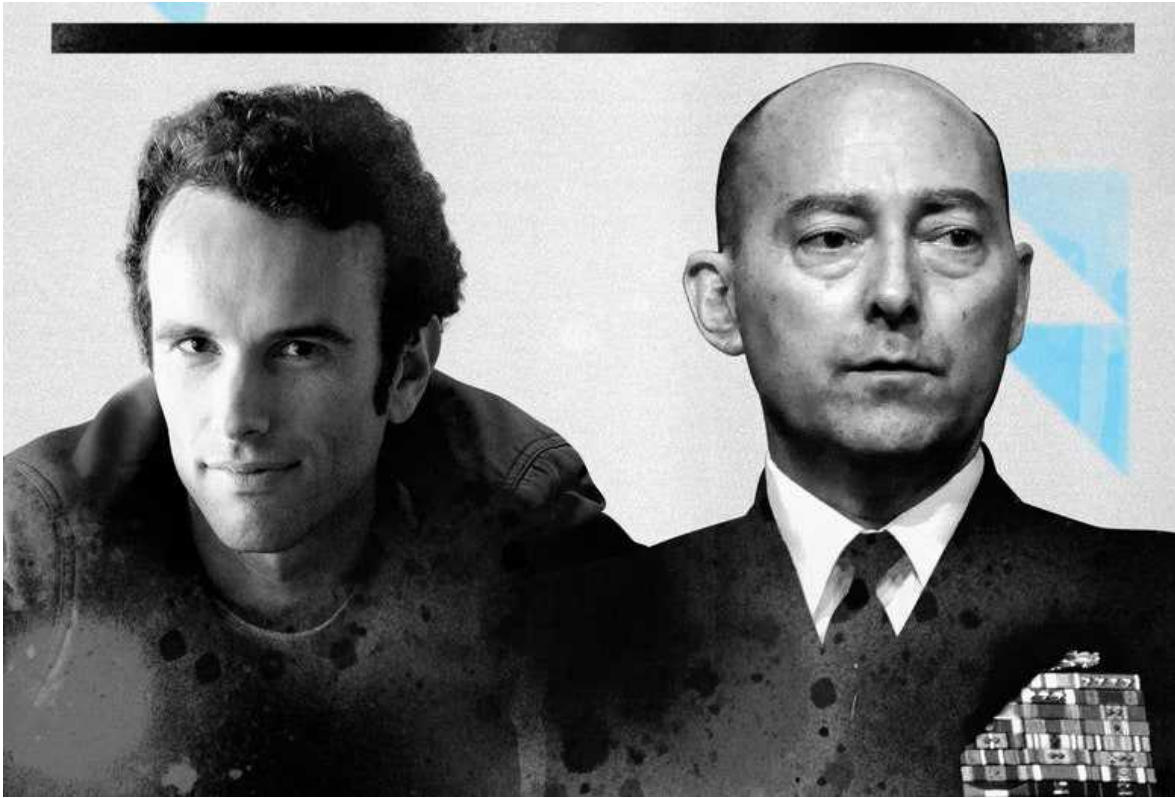
“It seems I've been recalled to Beijing,” said Minister Chiang. He once again glanced outside the glass conference room, to where his security detail lingered. Lin Bao now understood; those men were to ensure the minister returned—whether he wanted to or not. “After what happened three days

ago in Zhanjiang,” the minister continued, “certain voices are saying that our planning miscalculated the American response.” He fixed his stare on Lin Bao, examining him for the slightest reaction to such charges of *miscalculation*. “Those same voices, both inside and outside the Politburo Standing Committee, are blaming me. Intrigue like this is nothing surprising. My enemies see a vulnerability and they strike after it. They claim I’m to blame for the actions of our unreliable allies in the Barents Sea, or for an American president whose greatest weakness is her fear of being perceived as weak. I haven’t come as far as I have without possessing certain instincts that allow me to navigate such intrigues. And it is those instincts that drew me to you, Admiral Lin Bao. It is why I made you Ma Qiang’s replacement, and it is why I am asking for your support now, against not only our enemies on the outside but also our enemies within.”

“My support?” asked Lin Bao.

“Yes, for what comes next.”

But Lin Bao still didn’t know what came next. Perhaps they could hold their gains around Taipei and negotiate with the Americans. The devastation of Zhanjiang would be the price they’d pay to annex Taiwan. He said as much to Minister Chiang, reminding him that their original plan was based on a strategy of de-escalation, as well as Sun Tzu’s wisdom about subduing one’s enemy without fighting.



[What Did I Just Read? A Conversation With the Authors of 2034](#)

By [WIRED Staff](#)

One of the dark-suited security men knocked on the glass with the knuckle of his middle finger. He pointed to his watch. It was time.

Minister Chiang stood, tugging down on his uniform, which had ridden up his soft belly. With all the dignity he could muster, he raised a finger to the impatient member of his security detail, insisting that he wait another moment. Then he turned to Lin Bao and rested his hand on his shoulder. “Yes, we all know that old bit of Sun Tzu. He was a master of asymmetric warfare, of defeating an enemy without giving battle. But he also tells us, *On difficult ground, press on; on encircled ground, devise stratagems—*”

The security man swung open the door, interrupting them.

Minister Chiang's eyes flashed in that direction, but then he fixed them determinedly on Lin Bao. “*And on death ground, fight.*”

As improbably as he had arrived, Minister Chiang was gone.

Adapted from [2034: A Novel of the Next World War](#) by Elliot Ackerman and Admiral James Stavridis to be published March 09, 2021, by Penguin Press, an imprint of Penguin Publishing Group, a division of Penguin Random House LLC. Copyright © 2021 by Elliot Ackerman and James Stavridis.

If you buy something using links in our stories, we may earn a commission. This helps support our journalism. [Learn more.](#)

Illustrations by Sam Whitney; Getty Images

This excerpt appears in the February 2021 issue. [Subscribe now.](#)

Let us know what you think about this article. Submit a letter to the editor at mail@wired.com.

This article was downloaded by **calibre** from <https://www.wired.com/story/2034-part-vi-crossing-red-line/>

[WIRED Staff](#)

[Security](#)

03.02.2021 07:00 AM

What Did I Just Read? A Conversation With the Authors of *2034*

Elliot Ackerman and Admiral James Stavridis discuss their inspirations, personal experiences, and what keeps them up at night.

 Elliot Ackerman and Admiral James Stavridis

Elliot Ackerman and Admiral James Stavridis, authors of the novel *2034*. Photo-Illustration: Sam Whitney/Getty Images/Alamy

Earlier this year, as many of you know, WIRED dedicated our February issue of the magazine to an excerpt of [2034](#). Then, for the past six weeks, we [serialized the excerpt](#) on this website. Today we are running the [final WIRED chapter](#)—and an interview with the authors. (The book in its entirety goes on sale next week.)

MARIA STRESHINSKY, WIRED: So, where did the idea for this book come from?

ADMIRAL JAMES STAVRIDIS: From another novel that I read many years ago, in the 1980s, called [The Third World War](#), by Sir John Hackett. It is a superb novel that imagines a global war between the United States and the Soviet Union.

Over the past few years, the conversation about China and the United States heading toward a cold war began to gain real currency. You heard Henry

Kissinger, for example, say that “we're not in a cold war, but we're in the foothills of a cold war.”

I started to think: How can we avoid a war with China? And I think part of the reason we avoided a war with the Soviet Union was that we could imagine how terrible it would be. And part of imagining that is books like *The Third World War*, which kind of walks you through it.

MS: You two are clearly drawing from a deep knowledge base. How much of this story is real—how much of this is based on your own experience?

JS: The character who's the closest to me, career-wise, is Sarah Hunt. Well, there are a lot of differences—you know, like Sarah is much taller than I am and she has really great hair. [*Laughter.*] But our paths are very similar. She's a commodore and I've been a commodore, in command of a group of destroyers operating in the South China Sea. I've lived that opening scene, up to and including rescuing Chinese fishermen. I've been through these kinds of episodes—they just turned out better for me than that one does for Sarah.

I was also lucky enough to be a carrier strike group commander, just like Sarah. So I know that terrain well. And she has all the appropriate insecurities that people in command should have.

I think Elliot would tell you as a platoon commander, as a company commander, leading 30 grunts in a firefight, you never know what's around the corner. And Sarah never knows what's around the corner.

ELLIOT ACKERMAN: The doubts that she has—those are doubts that I very much identified with. The second you see your friends getting hurt, you start asking yourself hard questions that there's no answer to.

MS: I'm still processing the news that the South China Sea incident is based on real experiences you've had.

JS: Very real.

MS: What else in the book was inspired by specific experiences?

JS: The launching of strikes in combat is very real. I lived it. Also, I worked on the National Security Council staff in the 1990s. I know what the Situation Room is like, I know what it's like to come from the Old Executive Office Building into the West Wing and to be part of a code red.

The Russian character, Kolchak, is based on my experiences with Russians as the supreme allied commander of NATO. And I love the ambivalence of the Chinese attaché, Lin Bao, how he has a foot in both worlds. One of my classmates from Fletcher is Chinese and was educated in the United States; he has a foot in both worlds. I think Lin Bao is a very attractive, complicated character.

And, well, I think it's fair to say that Elliot knows Wedge.

EA: Yeah, I think that's fair. In the book, Wedge, the pilot, winds up as the commanding officer of Marine Fighter Attack Squadron 323, the Death Rattlers. One of my oldest friends is at this moment deployed to the Persian Gulf as the commanding officer of the Death Rattlers, so using that squadron was an homage to him.

But with novels—the ones that I enjoy reading, and the ones I try to write—often you're showing the topography of people's interior lives. And past a certain point, the characters I write are all me, or some version of me.

For instance, with Wedge, there's an opening refrain in the book where he talks about wanting to be close to *it*, and the *it* is flying on instinct, by the seat of your pants—something that his great-great-grandfather had done in the Second World War. He feels he's never had the opportunity to do that when the book opens up, and so much of his emotional journey is trying to be close to this *it*. I was never a pilot, but *it*, the quest for something real, is definitely an emotional journey that I feel familiar with. There are other characters too, like Chowdhury, who is in the National Security Council. He has a complex personal life and is divorced. I'm divorced.

And I've lived in DC, and have worked in the government and felt the crush of anonymity that comes with some of these bleak government jobs. Chowdhury talks about that; that's part of his character. I know how oppressive the bureaucracy can feel, but also how, even while you're

dealing with that feeling, you know you're sitting at the fulcrum of major decisions.

So, oftentimes you're excavating things from your own experience, your subconscious, and putting them into these characters.

Catch Every Chapter in This Series

Sign up to automatically receive all six installments of 2034 in your inbox.

Your email

Will be used in accordance with our [Privacy Policy](#).

MS: With all these characters, as I read this book, I had a strong feeling ... well, I kept asking: *Why don't they just stop?* Just: Don't hit the button, don't drop the bomb. This book is an intense cautionary tale, but the people who have control don't stop. Is that just me, not having much of a sense of what it is like to be in the military, with the imperatives that come with orders and chains of command?

JS: I would say this isn't a military thing. I think this is a sociological, human thing. Just look at the last hundred years or so—years when we are supposedly evolved as a species, when we trade with each other routinely and we elevate the rights of women and minorities, all the marvelous things of the last 100 years. Yet we stumbled into two massive world wars, one from 1914 to 1918 and one from 1939 to 1945. Collectively, we killed 80 million people in the 20th century.

We see bad leadership, certainly, around the First and the Second World Wars. Those people could have stopped, but again and again they didn't. And we see that events take on a momentum of their own. This happened in particular with the First World War—the sleepwalkers, as they're sometimes called, these nations that were intertwined by blood and marriage and trade and similar political systems, yet they blunder into this devastating conflict. And you can draw a plumb line from that war to the Second World War.

EA: The question you ask is one of the central themes of the book: Why do we as humans do this over and over and over again? Another theme is that it's rarely good to *start* a war: You want to be the one who finishes a war. So much of our American century is predicated on the first two world wars: Those are wars that we did not start, but, you know, we damn sure finished them, and they set us up with great prosperity. If a war is started between the US and China, how does that war end? And is it even possible for it to end to the benefit of either party? Thematically, that goes throughout the book.

JS: It's important to say that this is not a predictive book. It's a cautionary tale designed to help us stay out of events like this. And it's about trends, where things are going.

MS: What are the trends that keep you up at night?

JS: The number one thing is the thought of a massive cyberattack against the United States—that our opponents will refine cyber stealth and artificial intelligence in a kind of a witch's brew and then use it against us.

“We didn't start with 2034. We were actually further in the future. And the more we wrote, the more we started bringing the date closer and closer and realizing, no, no, no, no, no. This stuff is happening.”

Number two, we have to worry about this sense you get of the US and China sleepwalking potentially into a real war. If it happens, I would argue it'll happen in the South China Sea because our forces are in confluence. It is the land of unintended consequences, the South China Sea.

I'd also note the spoiler role that a nation like Iran or Russia can play. It is interesting that both Iran and Russia are inheritors of huge empires. But their day has passed. And they can create a great deal of mischief on the international scene. Elliot?

EA: I would say I slept a lot better before I started working on this project.

MS: I slept better before I ever read this book.

This excerpt appears in the February 2021 issue. [Subscribe to WIRED.](#)

Illustration: Owen Freeman

EA: One thing that was fascinating while working on the book was that real-world events would overtake our drafts. A big one was the death of Qassem Soleimani, the commander of the Iranian Revolutionary Guard's Quds Force, assassinated in a drone strike in January 2020. In an earlier draft of this book he's mentioned a number of times, but in that draft he's alive in the year 2034. So we had to rework that. Then there's the coronavirus. It obviously needed to be mentioned in a few places.

Looking back, the world that we began writing this book into is now a very different world. So who knows what the world will look like in 2034?

MS: You know, when you start this book, it feels like a work of fiction set way in the future. But somehow by the time you end, it feels like it's gotten much closer.

JS: Yeah. When we started writing, you had a Trump administration that was in a trade negotiation with China, and you felt like, OK, we're gonna work through this. And boy has that cratered. In every dimension since we started writing the book, the relationship with China has worsened. And there's no reason to think that it's suddenly going to reverse itself with the Biden team. So your point is well taken. It does feel closer to us, and we are closer to 2034.

EA: You know we didn't start with that date, with 2034. We were actually further in the future. And the more we wrote, the more we started bringing the date closer and closer and realizing, no, no, no, no, no. This stuff is happening.

MS: Do the events that happened here, between the election in November and January 6th at the US Capitol, make you think differently about your cautionary tale?

EA: Toward the end of the book, Chowdhury is thinking of a speech by Lincoln, in which he said: "*All the armies of Europe, Asia, and Africa*

combined with all the treasure of the earth (our own excepted) in their military chest, with a Buonaparte for a commander, could not by force take a drink from the Ohio or make a track on the Blue Ridge in a trial of a thousand years. . . . If destruction be our lot we must ourselves be its author and finisher. As a nation of freemen we must live through all time or die by suicide.” The events between the election and the riot at the Capitol certainly took us much closer to that “suicide.” I very much hope we can find a way to avoid it.

MS: In the real world, are there voices that help you sleep better?

JS: Certainly on January 21 there were. I think what you are going to see is a Biden team that comes in with a deep knowledge of the issues: the challenges of dealing with China, cybersecurity, our trade and tariff disagreements, arguments over 5G networks, the South China Sea, and the construction of artificial islands.

I look for this team to create a strategy to deal with China. What we've had for the last four years is episodic tactical engagement—from dinners at Mar-a-Lago to a kind of quasi-trade agreement that never really got lift behind it to freedom-of-navigation patrols steaming through the South China Sea. None of it connected in a strategic sense that brings ends, ways, and means together. The Biden team, because it's their MO, will construct a strategy and they'll consult with the experts. You'll see a more coherent approach.

But it's not going to be a return to the idea that we can simply trade our way into a China that wants to be part of the global system. Those days are gone. China has a plan, has a strategy. One belt, one road, it's called. The Biden team is well aware of that. And we'll think concurrently, on the strategic side: How do we avoid a war but ensure that we aren't simply turning over the keys of the international car to China? That would be a mistake for the United States. India will be key to that, I believe.

| [Section menu](#) | [Main menu](#) |

[Erika Hayasaki](#)

[Backchannel](#)

02.23.2021 07:00 AM

How to Remember a Disaster Without Being Shattered by It

Margaret McKinnon survived a midair catastrophe, then became a major researcher of memory and trauma. Now she's studying how the pandemic will haunt us.

 plate photograph of margaret

Photographs: Driely S. Carter

Inside the narrow airplane bathroom at 39,000 feet, Margaret McKinnon tried to turn on the faucet, but she couldn't get any water to come out. It was just past 5:45 am, Greenwich Mean Time, on August 24, 2001, and McKinnon was somewhere high above the mid-Atlantic.

Her husband of less than one week, John Baljkas, was asleep where she had left him in a center block of coach seats. The Toronto newlyweds were on their way to a honeymoon in Portugal. With a little less than two hours to go, McKinnon was hoping to get back and nap a bit before landing, but no matter how much she fiddled with the sink she couldn't get it to work. She had no idea that the bathroom's plumbing relied on air pressure generated by the plane's jet engines, and that a faulty tap can be a sign of a much [deeper failure](#). So she thought little of it and gave up.

As McKinnon made her way down the dark aisle to her spot next to Baljkas, she noticed that passengers were beginning to stir. The retractable television monitors above the aisles had just finished playing the movie *Chocolat* and were a few minutes into an episode of *Seinfeld* when the show suddenly cut off. The cabin lights flickered.

She sat down next to Baljkas, who had just woken up. A voice came over the speaker, first in Portuguese: “Atenção passageiros ...” The couple couldn’t understand the message, but they noticed passengers around them becoming alarmed and crying out. Then came English: “The pilot is experiencing difficulties.”

McKinnon and Baljkas heard the word “ditch,” but its meaning didn’t instantly register. The crew fanned out and directed passengers to pull their life jackets from beneath their seats. They told everyone to take off their shoes. They repeated the directions in three languages. A flight attendant began to speak, but broke down in tears before she could finish. Then the meaning of “ditch” came clear: “We’re going to land in the water,” said another flight attendant.

The intercom died. From the middle of the aircraft, McKinnon heard a noise. A click. Like part of the plane had shut off. Then the soft growl of engine noise fell silent, and suddenly they were surrounded by the whistling sound of air against the fuselage. A stillness.

At 6:26 am, McKinnon heard: “The engine has gone out.”

Now the powerless 338,000-pound machine—with nothing left to propel it—was floating swiftly downward from 34,000 feet, like a paper airplane drifting in the wind.

“We’re going to die,” a passenger cried.

McKinnon had grown up listening to police and fire scanners. Her father was a deputy fire marshal, and her mother was a nurse. From their living room, McKinnon heard about car crashes, people trapped inside of homes, or victims escaping from burning buildings, dragging themselves outside for help.

Overhearing these life-or-death intrusions into an otherwise ordinary childhood, she started out thinking she wanted to be a writer, drawn to stories of resilience in the face of trauma. “That was absolutely my dream,” she says. But in college her interests cut a new channel, and she majored in psychology.

By the time she got engaged to Baljkas, McKinnon was a PhD student studying memory and its pathways in the brain at the University of Toronto. Baljkas was a graduate student in graphic design, and they had met through McKinnon's best friend from high school. He was logical and cool-headed. She was empathetic, probing. "It will be fine," Baljkas told her as the plane bucked back and forth underneath them.

Onboard, a couple tried to wrap a life vest around their young child. People near McKinnon and Baljkas were praying, whispering, and weeping, calling out the name of Our Lady of Fatima in Portuguese. Pleading for their lives. Saying goodbye to daughters and sons. McKinnon, who had long suffered from asthma, struggled to inhale.

From her seat, she felt the aircraft swerve and rock as it glided. Oxygen masks tumbled from above, but some of them didn't work. "Please just make this end right now, God," someone aboard prayed. "Make it quick."

McKinnon remembers thinking in those moments: *You know, my life, it's been a good life. My husband, I love him.* As she grew more distraught and terrified, and the plane descended faster, she surrendered to the inevitable. She thought of a [video](#) she'd once seen that showed a hijacked Ethiopian Airlines flight in 1996. The pilot had attempted to land in the Indian Ocean after running out of fuel. The plane in the grainy footage broke apart immediately upon hitting the water. McKinnon knew the chances of surviving a water crash were slim.

But even as McKinnon accepted the end, Baljkas rejected the possibility completely. He believed they would survive, no matter what. He planned how their escape would go: They would crash into the ocean, climb out of an exit, make their way to shore. He knew they were both good swimmers, and he rationalized that they would not get hypothermia in the warmer Atlantic waters.

Dig Deeper with Our Longreads Newsletter

Sign up to get our best longform features, investigations, and thought-provoking essays, in your inbox every Sunday.

Your email

Enter your email

SUBMIT

Will be used in accordance with our [Privacy Policy](#).

“We’ll need our shoes,” he told her as the wide-body Airbus 330 continued to drop.

She gripped his hand.

“We’re going to be OK,” he told her.

The disaster went on like that for 30 minutes. Earthquake survivors often say that a temblor seems to last an eternity, when its actual duration is a matter of seconds. To believe that you are about to die for half an hour—to jostle inside a metal tube as you imagine yourself careening into the ocean, killed by either the impact or by drowning—is to endure at least a few eternities.

At some point, the copilot announced that they were going to attempt a landing on an island called Terceira, in the Azores, within the next five to seven minutes. The pilot turned the gliding airliner around in a giant, hideous corkscrew, banking hard and turning everyone sideways, before leveling out and picking up speed. McKinnon’s thoughts jumped from imagining what it would feel like to die in a water landing to envisioning a crash on land. She pictured them plowing into a neighborhood of people, killing all of them too.

Outside the windows in the predawn dark, it was hard to see anything, but McKinnon caught a glimpse of the ground—then water again. Until the last second, it was unclear what lay beneath them.

Then, finally, the plane’s landing gear slammed into a hard surface. McKinnon’s body pitched forward, her ears filled with the sound of scraping and grinding until the plane came to a stop. Passengers began to cheer and applaud, until the crew began rushing them toward the exit slides for fear that the aircraft would explode on the ground. Baljkas figured they would need cash and IDs, so he grabbed their wallets.

After everyone was out, buses arrived and took the shaken, bruised survivors to a small terminal. And somehow, in that moment of relief and horror,

McKinnon's scientific curiosities kicked in. How would all these people remember this event? She recalls looking around at her fellow passengers, these walking ghosts. McKinnon saw people still in their life jackets sprawled on the ground. The smell of vomit was everywhere. "Terrible," she would remember. "Brutal." Yet she also thought in that moment about what the world might be able to learn from them. Just hours after the crash landing, she thought: *We should really do a study on this.*

Less than three weeks later, McKinnon and Baljkas were back in Canada, sitting down for a set of interviews with the American TV host Chris Hansen, who was preparing a special segment on the miraculous crash landing of Air Transat Flight 236 for the prime-time newsmagazine *Dateline NBC*. The day after their interview, a pair of airliners flew into the World Trade Center in New York City, another crashed into the Pentagon, and a fourth plowed into a field in Pennsylvania.

As the entire world [processed](#) the shock of 9/11, McKinnon found herself identifying strongly with the passengers on the hijacked aircraft—with the feeling of "knowing you're on a doomed plane," as she describes it, "and that the end is near." She had nightmares about the Air Transat plane hitting the Twin Towers. But for Baljkas, the terrorist attack felt completely disconnected from his own near-death experience. McKinnon wondered how the rest of their fellow survivors experienced the attacks.

NBC finally aired its segment on Air Transat Flight 236, called "A Wing and a Prayer," on April 2, 2002. The show dramatically reconstructed the plane's descent from the passengers' point of view, minute by excruciating minute; it also added in certain God's-eye-view contextual details that had only become clear in the days, weeks, and months after the emergency landing: How, four days before the flight, Air Transat mechanics had accidentally installed mismatched parts during an engine replacement; how those parts had rubbed and chafed against a fuel line, causing a large leak to open up inside the plane's tank a few hours into the flight; how the lack of fuel had disabled first one engine, then the other; how the captain, a 30-year flying veteran, had set a course for Terceira when the island was still hundreds of miles away; how there were a total of 293 passengers and 13 crew members aboard the plane; how the radio operators down on the island didn't really expect any of them to survive.

McKinnon and Baljkas watched the *Dateline* special together at home. By then, it was becoming clear how much McKinnon's life and career had been transformed by her experience over the mid-Atlantic. She was still an ambitious young scientist—she was now serving out a prestigious postdoctoral fellowship at the Rotman Research Institute in Toronto—but she moved through the world on high alert for danger, startling easily. She suffered from nightmares and anxiety-inducing flashbacks that sent her back into that seat on the plane. It was a little like living with the police and fire scanners of her childhood, only this time the life-or-death intrusions into her consciousness were her own memories, and she couldn't turn them off or get away from them.

Her research had begun to change course too. Before the crash, she had worked on studies about music and cognition, and then on memory in Alzheimer's patients. But now she was increasingly drawn to study memory and post-traumatic stress disorder, a condition whose symptoms she was experiencing herself. McKinnon had been trained in a tradition of Canadian neuropsychology that was built on the study of unusual brains—ones changed by injury or surgery or illness—and the particular behaviors and mental states that resulted from them. And now she was curious about her own brain. She wanted to know why she suffered from anxiety-inducing flashbacks while other people who survived the exact same events, including her own husband, did not. Baljkas didn't have nightmares, and did not feel changed or haunted by the event. He was just happy to be alive.

McKinnon never forgot about the idea she'd had that day in the Azores for a study of Flight 236. When she came back to Canada, she discussed the notion with one of her advisers at the Rotman Institute, a neuropsychologist named Brian Levine, who had independently considered the same thought. After all, it wasn't every day that you could expose a bunch of human subjects to the experience of *impending death* for 30 minutes, under conditions “approaching that of a laboratory experiment,” as the two scientists later wrote. A study of such a near-fatal incident, both scientists realized, would be unprecedented. They agreed to work on it together. But McKinnon would not only be one of the study's authors; she would also help hone their methodology as a test subject in a pilot study.

It took them years to track down enough passengers willing to participate in a study. Ultimately, 19 came forward. Half of them, like McKinnon, lived with the symptoms of post-traumatic stress disorder. The other half, like Baljkas, did not. The research would involve two major components: a set of brain scans and a set of structured interviews with the survivors that Levine and McKinnon would analyze.



The Strange Case of the Woman Who Can't Remember Her Past—Or Imagine Her Future

By [Erika Hayasaki](#)

Psychologists have long distinguished between two kinds of long-term, [autobiographical memory](#), which are each stored in different parts of the human brain. There are episodic memories, which are linked to a subject's first-person, emotional, embodied point of view (like McKinnon's memory of struggling to breathe in her seat during the descent of Flight 236), and

then there are non-episodic memories, which are more factual and detached from one's subjective experience (like McKinnon's knowledge of the flight number). The scientists wanted to see how many memories of each kind the survivors retained, and to check those memories for accuracy. And in the brain scans, they wanted to see how the survivors responded neurologically to a vivid video re-creation of the accident—which came courtesy of the NBC News archive.

And so it was that, in 2004, as a guinea pig in her own research, McKinnon found herself lying face-up inside of a magnetic resonance imaging machine, staring up at a mirror reflecting a projection of B-roll from *Dateline NBC*: A plane taking off from a runway. A map of the flight route. Clips from *Chocolat* interspersed between plane animations. McKinnon's own [younger face](#) flashed before her eyes too—her barely-there makeup, blue eyes, and bob haircut.

For McKinnon, viewing the *Dateline* footage felt like being flung back in time. “Boom, my body is right over the top of the island again,” she recalls. It was as if she were trapped inside her episodic memories: inside of the aircraft again, trying to breathe, utterly possessed by the awareness of impending death. It was not just a memory but an all-encompassing physical sensation. Waves of confusion and fear.

McKinnon hadn't realized how emotionally taxing her participation in the pilot study would be. And it wasn't just the exposure to the *Dateline* episode that was grueling. So was reading through the interviews with other survivors—some of whose memories she would eventually stitch into her own timeline. The other research participants would recall details that McKinnon hadn't: the smell of something burning. Darkness. The flight attendant's shaky voice. The pilot shouting: “When I say ‘Brace! Brace!’ lean forward and put your hands behind your head.”

Some remembered the pilot counting down minutes to impact. Others spoke about the silence and the wind. They recalled the airplane making violent turns. A loud swoosh coming from inside the plane, followed by cries for help. Some participants recalled the pilot saying, “About to go into the water.” Then the feeling of coming down too fast. Screams. They

remembered the pilot suddenly shouting, “We have a runway! We have a runway!”

Published in the journal *Clinical Psychological Science* as two studies in [2014](#) and [2015](#), the research on Flight 236 found, not surprisingly, that the emotional memory centers of survivors’ brains—the amygdala, hippocampus, and midline frontal and posterior regions—showed increased blood flow when the passengers were exposed to video footage of the crash landing. Many of the passengers’ brains also exhibited remarkably similar heightened activity when the scientists showed them news footage of 9/11. Control subjects showed far more neutral responses to both disasters. For survivors, it was as if the trauma of Flight 236 had bled outside memories of the event itself.

But probably the most surprising finding was that all the passengers of Flight 236—those who’d developed PTSD and those who hadn’t—exhibited what the psychologists called “robust mnemonic enhancement.” Both groups remembered the incident in unusually rich, episodic, first-person detail. PTSD has long been connected to harboring vivid memories. But apparently, the study found, just because an individual retains lucid traumatic memories does not mean those memories will exert an intrusive hold on them.

To McKinnon and her colleagues, this indicated that PTSD is not necessarily driven by the storage of such an emotional memory. There was something else about the people holding those memories that made them susceptible to being haunted by them.

By the time those findings became public, McKinnon was well established in her career as a researcher of traumatic memory. And in her research, she now often joined forces with a neuroscientist and psychiatry professor named Ruth Lanius, a powerhouse who had published more than 150 papers and chapters on traumatic stress. The two women were drawn to each other, in part because they shared an interest in the untold varieties of ways people respond to traumatic events.

While McKinnon was gearing up for her study on Flight 236, for instance, Lanius had published a [study](#) about a married couple who had been traumatized in starkly different ways by the same incident. They had been

driving along a highway when their car became involved in a violent 100-vehicle pileup; trapped inside their own car, they could hear a child begging for help in a burning vehicle nearby. They listened, helpless, as her screams came to an end. In interviews with Lanius' team, the husband recalled feeling intensely anxious throughout the ordeal, frantically trying to free them from the car. But his wife described being "in shock, frozen, and numb." She was incapable of moving, much less figuring out how to escape.

For her study, Lanius put the couple through an fMRI machine as they listened to scripted audio narrations of their accident experiences—much the way McKinnon's subjects reexperienced the crash of Flight 236 via *Dateline* footage. The couple's neurological and physiological responses in the machine mirrored those they described experiencing during the actual event. The husband's heart rate increased. His blood oxygen levels rose in specific regions of his brain. In contrast, the wife's heart rate remained at a baseline, and she exhibited a "shutdown response" in specific brain regions.

The couple both showed symptoms of post-traumatic stress, but the wife's symptoms seemed unusual. Follow-up studies by Lanius and colleagues found that, in fact, 30 percent of individuals with PTSD experience such a "numbing effect." For one trauma victim, a memory might bring all of the bodily senses and fear online, like receiving an electrifying jolt; the person becomes "hyper-aroused." For another it might switch the senses off, deadening them to the world. Neither response is a healthy way to live—and indeed, Lanius' research was instrumental in the addition of a "dissociative" form of PTSD to psychiatry's diagnostic bible, the DSM.

Today, McKinnon and Lanius are part of an emerging school of researchers and clinicians who believe that the field of trauma therapy needs an overhaul. PTSD, they say, is too often used as a blanket diagnosis for people suffering from complex and varied kinds of trauma, and the remedies that the field offers are likewise far too broad-brushed. For years, the predominant treatments for post-traumatic stress have essentially been forms of talk therapy: There's exposure therapy, a course of treatment in which patients revisit fearful memories and situations in hopes of becoming desensitized; and there's cognitive behavioral therapy, a "solution-oriented" dialog meant to identify and root out unhelpful beliefs about one's trauma.

But in the minds of many researchers like McKinnon and Lanius, the stark variations in people's response to trauma don't primarily point to faulty beliefs on the part of the victims; they point to real differences in their brains, bodies, backgrounds, and environments. The job of trauma researchers is to home in on an understanding of those differences and come up with therapies informed by them.

The two women, along with others in their field, have helped bolster the case for some treatments that go beyond talking through tough memories. One of them is called Eye Movement Desensitization and Reprocessing, or EMDR. In a session, the patient is asked to hold a traumatic memory in their mind while a therapist prompts them to rhythmically swing their gaze back and forth from side to side. It sounds bizarre, but the approach has gained increasing acceptance in the medical [mainstream](#) for its efficacy. Scientists don't know precisely why it works—some argue that the technique [mimics](#) how the brain integrates and processes memories during REM sleep—but the effect is often that a patient can shift from reliving a traumatic memory in first-person terror to simply remembering it.

Another approach is a more controversial technique called [neurofeedback](#), which involves strapping patients into an electroencephalogram cap, putting them in front of a screen that is reflecting their own brain waves, and then asking them to figure out how to change those waves a certain way, sometimes through a video game interface. Lanius has performed studies of neurofeedback as a way of treating PTSD.

McKinnon, who is now an associate professor of psychiatry at McMaster University and a senior professor at the Homewood Research Institute in Ontario, has researched some of these alternative therapies; she has also tried some, like EMDR, herself. The stakes of her work are still personal. Propelled by a sense of kinship with other survivors of trauma, McKinnon's research career has taken her into the minds and memories of soldiers, paramedics, veterans, police officers, and rape victims, as well as accident survivors. And in recent months, she has been paying particularly close attention to a new and growing group of people struggling with trauma: In April, the Canadian Institutes of Health Research gave McKinnon and Lanius \$1 million to study frontline health care workers in the nation's Covid wards.

You might say we've all experienced a collective period of trauma in the age of [Covid-19](#). The pandemic has stolen away loved ones, cut off social contact, forced people to lose their jobs, heightened the fear of death, and left many of us feeling lonely, helpless, or in a state of grief. And there are stark variations in how we have reacted to this shared trauma. Some of us are prone to ride out this reality with quiet acceptance, despite feelings of anger, sadness, and frustration. Others are driven into states of severe depression or anxiety and ongoing fear of the unknown, exacerbated by that loss of control. Some live in denial.

Even within families and households, people can react entirely differently. One partner in a marriage might live in day-to-day fear of contagious droplets or mysterious coughs, panicking over the loss of control. Their partner might take an approach far more accepting of fate, problem-solving with a measure of patience or a calmer submission to the threat of the virus.

These drastic differences in coping with stress, anxiety, and trauma appear to have both a biological and environmental basis. For most people, a sudden car accident, an imminent plane crash, a life-threatening attack, or a brush with someone who might be infected with a novel virus can kick up the fight-or-flight response, releasing hormones like cortisol and epinephrine that propel energy to muscles. Neurotransmitters like norepinephrine, adrenaline, and dopamine filter into the amygdala, stimulating the brain to tell the heart and lungs to beat and breathe faster. Emotions and acuity go on high alert.

For the majority of people who are *not* susceptible to PTSD, those symptoms may begin to subside after several months, especially if they receive immediate therapeutic treatment. But for someone prone to the disorder, a traumatic event can cause those same stress hormones to go into overdrive. The brain might get stuck in a constant state of fight-or-flight—the kind of chronic stress that impedes the development of stem cells, brain connections, and neurons, and makes someone more vulnerable to chronic health problems like heart disease, stroke, diabetes, and cancer.

One day in May, over Zoom, a doctor named Will Harper from a Covid-19 unit at McMaster University Medical Center told McKinnon about a harrowing scene from one of his shifts: His patient, suffering from both

dementia and coronavirus, had ripped out her IVs and yanked off her oxygen mask. She would not eat or drink. She pushed away medicine and thrashed. “We all knew she was dying of Covid, and there was nothing that could be done,” explained Harper. But he looked over at a nurse on the shift with him—a veteran health care worker—and saw that she was visibly shaken and distraught.

As the situation deteriorated, the nurse went into her own emotional tailspin; she sat on the patient’s bed and began tugging at her own protective gear in agitation. Now the nurse’s safety glove was off, her wrist exposed. Now she was lurching toward the door, trying to run away. Distraught, she was not thinking about stopping to properly sanitize or remove her gown, mask, goggles, or gloves. Like the patient, it seemed the nurse only wanted to be anywhere but there. It was “like a scuba diver trying to get to the surface too quickly,” Harper said.

He knew she might harm herself, that she was putting herself at risk of contracting Covid-19. He pulled his coworker aside. “Breathe,” Harper said, trying to get her to snap back into the moment. “Breathe.” For Harper, the memory was upsetting; but for the nurse, the event seemed to have been traumatizing.

This period of mass death, McKinnon knows, will reside within us long after the pandemic ends. And it’s not clear who will keep carrying fearful memories of it around for years—who will be like Baljkas walking away from Flight 236, and who will be like McKinnon.

It is still largely a mystery what makes someone susceptible to PTSD. “We know what some of the risk factors are,” McKinnon says. “But we don’t really have a precise way of predicting whether or not they will go on to develop PTSD.” Individuals with a history of trauma may be more vulnerable, she added, along with those of us who belong to a group that has been marginalized by society—people who’ve been bullied, taunted, subjected to discrimination, or raised in an environment of toxic stress. McKinnon says she had a history of depression before she boarded Flight 236; scientists believe that depression can also be a risk factor for PTSD.

But she and Lanius hope that, by studying frontline workers like Harper and the nurse on his shift, they might one day be able to help those who emerge with PTSD improve their symptoms and everyday functioning. In therapy sessions, the patients learn skills to regulate their emotions and become more aware of sensations within their bodies. Are they hyper-aroused or emotionally offline? Do they relive memories or shut down in the face of them? Patients are given methods to tolerate their own distress and strengthen their sense of self.

Of a few things, Lanius and McKinnon are confident: Treating trauma, they believe, is not merely about examining or erasing a bad memory. Instead, the key is to recognize that there are memories that you recount at a distance—in third person—almost as if telling a story about someone else. And then there are the visceral, episodic ones, like the ones McKinnon formed on Flight 236, which send her traveling back in time, reexperiencing scenes as if her body were stuck inside the past.

The duo have devised techniques to help trauma survivors work toward a goal of moving away from reexperiencing a disturbing memory in first person. With awareness, practice, therapy, and sometimes interventions like EMDR and neurofeedback, patients focus on what they can control—in the hope that they can eventually hover outside of the memory instead, confidently and fearlessly, like an omniscient narrator.

“I can just tell the story,” McKinnon said recently, of her experience aboard Flight 236. She is now able to go over the details without feeling the pang of each one inside of her body, the heart palpitations, the overwhelming feeling of impending doom. The PTSD from that day has dampened. The nightmares come less often. She can offer the sequence of events and recount her thoughts from back then, as if reading a script.

“I’m just listing out the facts,” McKinnon explained. “I have the cognitive control to do that now.”

After years of therapy and two decades of her own research into the nature of trauma, she has the measure of mental and physical mastery that she hopes her patients can achieve. She can recall the day of the crash, how the smell of jet fuel filled the air—and the moment, just after the pilot’s

miraculous landing, when everyone realized the plane might explode. The landing gear was on fire. Passengers slid down escape slides and ran for their lives. McKinnon's dress flew up as she slid. She gripped her asthma inhaler, puffing. They stumbled through a field of tall, wet grass. It was foggy and cold.

She recounts how passengers spent five hours in the terminal before loading onto a boat headed for another island, to another airport. They would face their own version of exposure therapy in the days after, each survivor boarding yet another plane to get home, and then just three weeks later, watching as terrorists flew airplanes full of passengers into the Twin Towers and the Pentagon.

Yet McKinnon says she is not terrified now. She recalls the events of August and September 2001 as if fulfilling an obligation, in service of a greater good. She has turned these memories over in her mind so many times it's as if they are suspended outside of herself. They could be the details of someone else's story, really. Drifting like a paper airplane, elsewhere and away.

Illustrations by Alyssa Walker. Underlying portrait of Margaret McKinnon courtesy of John Baljkas.

This article was downloaded by **calibre** from <https://www.wired.com/story/remember-disaster-without-being-shattered-ptsd-covid/>

By [Elliot Ackerman](#) and [Admiral James Stavridis](#)

[Backchannel](#)

02.23.2021 07:00 AM

2034, Part V: Sailing Into Darkness

“Somewhere in that black hole was the *Zheng He* and the rest of the Chinese fleet. And she would be expected to find and destroy it.”

Two men having a conversation in a trophy room.

Illustration: Owen Freeman

07:26 MAY 06, 2034 (GMT+8)

SOUTHEAST OF THE SPRATLY ISLANDS

Lin Bao could see early light on the water. It had been so long since he had been at sea. So long since he had held command.

Not so long, however, since their great victory in these waters, or since his government had released to the world news of its victory over the Americans—thirty-seven ships sunk from the Seventh Fleet, to include the carriers *Ford* and *Miller*—and that same stunned world had woken to a new reality: The balance of power on the ocean had shifted.

And not so long since he had received his orders from Minister Chiang himself to take command of the *Zheng He* Carrier Battle Group. He had left his wife and daughter in Beijing three days before and arrived at the South Sea Fleet Headquarters at Zhanjiang with his orders in hand.

Lin Bao was thinking of Ma Qiang as he flew out to meet what was now his ship. The two young pilots of his twin-rotor transport had invited him to sit in the cockpit's third jump seat. They were cheerful and proud of their assignment to deliver their new commander from Zhanjiang to his carrier, assuring him of a smooth flight and a perfect landing, “... which is good luck for a new commander,” one of them said with a toothy grin as they finished their preflight. Observing the sea from the cockpit, Lin Bao wondered if Ma Qiang's body was somewhere beneath him. His old classmate's dying wish having been a burial at sea. This, Lin Bao knew, was all part of a legend that Ma Qiang had orchestrated throughout his life, up to his death, which conveniently had arrived at the moment of his greatest victory. Like the naval hero Admiral Horatio Nelson at Trafalgar, Ma Qiang

had maneuvered his flagship recklessly close to the action, inviting the peril that would assure his glory. When one American aircraft, an old model F/A-18 Hornet, slipped the *Zheng He's* defenses, the pilot did something distinctly un-American. The pilot had kamikazed into the *Zheng He's* flight deck, right beneath the bridge.

The *Zheng He* now appeared on the horizon, as small as a postage stamp.

As his plane lined up its approach, Lin Bao imagined it wasn't all that different than the final journey taken by the Hornet. He recalled Minister Chiang's reaction to the news that several sailors, two junior officers, and Admiral Ma Qiang had been killed in this American kamikaze attack. "That was a very brave pilot," the minister had said of the American, saying nothing of Ma Qiang, whose glory-hunting seemed to annoy Minister Chiang far more than his death seemed to disturb him. To Lin Bao, he had only added, "I suppose you'll be getting your command after all." And if Minister Chiang had been privately dismissive of Ma Qiang and what he perceived to be the undue risks he'd taken, publicly the defense minister and the entire membership of the Politburo Standing Committee had extolled the virtues of Admiral Ma Qiang, the hero of what they had already enshrined as the Victory of the South China Sea.

Nothing like replacing a hero, thought Lin Bao, as the plane made its descent toward the flight deck. He could hear the familiar chatter of air traffic control through his headset as they held their glide path. Only two of the four arresting wires on the deck of the *Zheng He* were operational. The one-wire and four-wire had been damaged during the battle and still, more than a week later, had gone unrepaired, a deficiency Lin Bao made a note of as he imagined the work ahead when preparing this crew for the battles that surely awaited them.

Some low-level turbulence then caused their aircraft to pitch violently. As they descended below one thousand feet, Lin Bao noticed that the flight deck was crowded, or at least more crowded than usual, as off-duty members of the crew assembled to catch a glimpse of their new commander's landing. When their aircraft hit the deck, it touched down a little long. The pilots throttled the engine to give their aircraft the extra power for a second pass.

The pilot who had flubbed the landing turned toward Lin Bao in the jump seat and sheepishly apologized. “Very sorry, Admiral. That turbulence knocked us off our glide path. We’ll get you in on the next pass.”

Lin Bao told the pilot not to worry about it, though privately he added this failure to the deficiencies he was cataloging at his new command.

As they gained altitude, perhaps the pilot could sense Lin Bao's disappointment, because he continued to prattle on as he lined up their aircraft for a second approach. “What I was saying before, sir,” the pilot continued, “about landing on the first pass being good luck for your command—I wouldn't put too much stock in that either.”

Another jolt of turbulence hit the aircraft.

“I remember when Admiral Ma Qiang took command,” the pilot added cheerfully. “Variable winds that day. His plane didn't land until the third pass.”

13:03 APRIL 28, 2034 (GMT+5:30)
NEW DELHI

If not for the Chinese government's decision to wait twenty-four hours before releasing the news of its victory in the South China Sea, Chowdhury never would have sprung Wedge from the Iranian embassy. In the days after that operation, Chowdhury had begun to see Wedge's detention as a first misstep in what had otherwise been a series of perfectly executed moves by the Chinese, beginning with the phone call from their M&M-eating defense attaché about the *Wén Rui* those weeks before.

The release of Major Mitchell had been a risky proposition. When Chowdhury first appeared in his room at the Iranian embassy, Wedge had looked decidedly disappointed. He later told Chowdhury that he'd been expecting a Red Cross nurse, not a string bean of a diplomat. This disappointment immediately dissipated when Chowdhury explained that the Indian government had that very morning negotiated with the Iranians for his release into their custody. Chowdhury added only one word: “Hurry.”

Chowdhury and Wedge were rushed out a back service entrance by two officers from India's Intelligence Bureau.

Later, when Wedge asked Chowdhury how his uncle had convinced the Iranian ambassador to release him into Indian custody, a move that certainly wasn't in the best interests of the Iranian government, Chowdhury had answered with a single Russian word: *kompromat*.

Catch Every Chapter in This Series

Sign up to automatically receive all six installments of 2034 in your inbox.

Your email

Will be used in accordance with our [Privacy Policy](#).

“Kompromat?” asked Wedge.

“Little boys,” Chowdhury answered, explaining that India's Intelligence Bureau made it a point to develop and cache bits of leverage over any foreigner, particularly one of ambassadorial rank. And it just so happened that this ambassador was a pederast. When Chowdhury's uncle had gone to the Iranian ambassador with the facts, the ambassador's calculation had been simple. He would face a lesser reprimand from his government for being duped by the Indians than he would if his sexual proclivities ever became known. “That's why they released you, Major Mitchell.”

“My friends call me Wedge,” he said, a wide grin stretching across his still-bruised face.

Chowdhury left Wedge at the hospital with the embassy staff, who would arrange his flight back to the US, or to wherever else the Marine Corps saw fit to send him. Chowdhury needed to return to Washington, to his duties, and to his daughter. From the hospital he was taken by car to the visitors' annex of the embassy, where he would collect his things and head to the airport. When he arrived at his quarters, he was in such a rush to pack that he walked straight to the bedroom, right past his uncle, who was sitting on the living room sofa, waiting patiently.

“Sandeep, may I have a word?” Chowdhury jumped when he heard the baritone voice behind him. “Sorry to startle you.”

“How'd you get in here?”

The old admiral rolled his eyes, as if he were disappointed that his nephew would ask such a naive question. Patel had in a single morning used his connections within his country's intelligence services, diplomatic corps, and military to arrange the release of a downed American flyer from Iranian custody; if he could handle that, he could certainly handle one locked door. Nevertheless, Patel gave his nephew a proper answer: “A local member of your embassy staff let me in.” Then, as if sensing this explanation wasn't quite sufficient, he added, “Someone we've done some favors for in the past.” Patel left it at that.

Chowdhury agreed to have a drink with his uncle. The two of them stepped outside and into a waiting black Mercedes sedan. Chowdhury didn't ask where they were going and his uncle didn't tell him. They barely spoke on the drive, which was fine with Chowdhury. In the few days he'd been in New Delhi, he'd hardly left the embassy complex; now, for the first time in his life, he had an opportunity to absorb the city. He was struck by how much it differed from his mother's descriptions, and from the photos he'd seen growing up. Gone were the dust-choked streets. Gone were the ramshackle shanties overflowing into those same streets. And gone, too, were what his uncle once called “the inconvenient and combustible masses prone to rebellion.”

The streets were clean. The homes were new and beautiful.

The shift in India's urban demographics had begun two decades before, under President Modi, who along with the other nationalist leaders of that era had sloughed away the old India by investing in the country's infrastructure, finally bringing the Pakistani threat to heel through a decisive victory in the Ten-Day War of 2024, and using that victory to build out India's military.

Chowdhury could have gleaned the history simply by looking out the car window, at the streets without litter, at the proliferation of glass high-rises,

at the packs of impeccably turned-out soldiers and sailors ambling down the freshly laid sidewalks, on leave from their tank divisions or on liberty from their ships. Modi and his acolytes had brushed away all resistance to their reforms, hiding the vast social wreckage. This makeover was hardly complete—much of the countryside still had a distance to go—but clearly the road ahead was smoothing as the century unfolded.

Finally, they arrived at their destination, which wasn't a step forward but rather a step backward in time: the Delhi Gymkhana, his uncle's club. A long, straight driveway led to its canopied entrance, while on the left and right teams of mowers kept the vast lawns perfectly cropped. Off in the distance Chowdhury could make out the grass tennis courts and shimmer of turquoise water in the swimming pool. After his uncle exchanged pleasantries with the staff, who all greeted him with obsequious bows, they were led to the veranda, which looked out on the elaborate gardens, another legacy from the club's founding at the height of the British Raj.

They ordered their drinks—gin and tonic for Patel, a club soda for Chowdhury, which evoked a disappointed sigh from the admiral. When the server left them, Patel asked, “How is my sister?” She was fine, Chowdhury answered. She enjoyed being a grandmother; his father's death had been very hard on her—but then he cut himself off, feeling suddenly as if he didn't quite possess the license to inform on his mother to her estranged brother. The conversation might have ended there were it not for a commotion inside the club, near the television above the bar. The well-turned-out patrons, most of whom wore tennis whites, along with the jacketed waiters and busboys, had gathered to listen to the news. The anchors were piecing together early reports of a massive naval engagement in the South China Sea, touching their earpieces and staring vacantly into the camera as some new fact trickled across the wire, all of which built to a single, astounding conclusion: The United States Navy had been soundly defeated.

Only Chowdhury and his uncle didn't feel the need to crowd around the television. They took the opportunity to sit, alone, on the now empty veranda. “It will take people a while to understand what this all means,” Patel said to his nephew as he nodded toward the bar.

“We're at war; that's what it means.”

Patel nodded. He took a sip of his gin and tonic. “Yes,” he said, “but your country's defeat is just beginning. That's also what this means.”

“Our navy is as capable as theirs, even more so,” Chowdhury replied defensively. “Sure, we underestimated them, but it's a mistake we won't make again. If anything, they're the ones who've made the mistake.” Chowdhury paused and changed the inflection of his voice. “*I fear all we have done is to awaken a sleeping giant and fill him with a terrible resolve.*”

His uncle knew the quote. “Admiral Isoroku Yamamoto,” replied Patel. “But this isn't Pearl Harbor. This is a very different situation. Look around you. Look at this club. When empires overreach, that's when they crumble. This club, with its fusty Britishness, is a monument to overreach.”

Chowdhury reminded his uncle that his country had far from overreached; that it had suffered a single defeat, perhaps two if you counted the “ambush of our flotilla,” as Chowdhury referred to what had happened to the *John Paul Jones* and its sister ships. “Also,” he added, allowing his voice to enter a graver register, “we haven't even discussed our country's tactical and strategic nuclear capability.”

The old admiral crossed his arms over his chest. “Listen to yourself. *Tactical and strategic nukes*. Do you hear what you're saying? With those weapons, no one wins.”

Chowdhury glanced away, and then, speaking under his breath like a petulant teenager, he muttered, “Hiroshima ... Nagasaki ... we won that.”

“*We*? Who is this *we*?” His uncle was becoming increasingly annoyed. “Your family lived not three miles from here in those days. And why do you think America prospered after the Second World War?”

“Because we *won*,” answered Chowdhury.

Patel shook his head. “The British won too; so did the Soviets, and even the French.”

“I don't see what you're getting at.”

“In war, it's not that you win. It's *how* you win. America didn't used to start wars. It used to finish them. But now”—Patel dropped his chin to his chest and began to shake his head mournfully—“now it is the reverse; now you start wars and don't finish them.” Then he switched the subject and began to ask again about his sister. Chowdhury showed him a photograph of his daughter; he spoke a bit more about his divorce, his mother's antipathy toward his wife—the Ellen DeGeneres clone, as his mother called her, though Patel didn't get the reference. After listening to his nephew, his only response was a question: “Would you ever consider returning home?”

“America is my home,” answered Chowdhury. “Nowhere else on earth could I, the son of an immigrant, rise up to work in the White House. America is special. That's what I've been trying to tell you.”

Patel sat, respectfully listening to his nephew. “Do you know what I most enjoy about belonging to this club?” he asked.

Chowdhury returned a vacant gaze.

“Come,” said Patel, pushing back his chair, its legs stuttering across the tiled floor of the veranda. They stepped into a room immediately inside, which appeared to be a trophy room, the walls lined with glass-fronted cabinets that contained resplendent two-handled cups engraved with years that reached back into other centuries. Patel took Chowdhury to a framed photograph in the far corner. Three ranks of British army officers stood flanked by their turbaned sepoys. The date was nearly one hundred years ago, a decade before Indian independence. Patel explained that the photograph was of the Rajputana Rifles, whose British officers were members of this club, and that it was taken on the eve of the Second World War, before the regiment shipped out for the Pacific theater. “Most of the officers were killed in either Burma or Malaya,” said Patel. Their sepia-toned expressions stared hauntingly back at Chowdhury. Then his uncle took a silver pen from his pocket, which he indexed on one face, that of a

mustachioed orderly with a squat build and single chevron, who scowled at the camera. “Him, right there. You see the name?” Patel tapped his pen on the bottom of the photograph, where there was a roster. “Lance Naik Imran Sandeep Patel ... your great-great-grandfather.”

Chowdhury stood silently in front of the photograph.

“It isn't only in America where people can change their fortunes,” his uncle said. “America is not so special.”

Chowdhury removed his phone from his pocket and snapped a photograph of his ancestor's face. “How do you think your government will respond?” he asked, gesturing toward the television and the breaking news about what seemed to be the certainty of an impending war.

“It's difficult to say,” his uncle told him. “But I believe we'll make out very well.”

“Why do you say that?”

“Because we have learned the lessons that you have forgotten.”

11:42 MAY 13, 2034 (GMT+9)
YOKOSUKA NAVAL BASE

First it was her flight home that was canceled.

Then her orders.

A medical evaluation was scheduled for her at the naval hospital.

This time she passed it.

A below-the-zone promotion came next, to rear admiral (lower half)—a one-star. A new set of orders followed. The assignment shocked her. The Navy was giving her command of the *Enterprise* Strike Group, which included the carrier itself as well as nearly twenty other ships. This all took a week. In another week she'd meet the flotilla at Yokosuka. The night

before the *Enterprise* arrived, Hunt had the first of the nightmares that would come to plague her.

In them, she is watching what is left of the *Ford* and *Miller* carrier strike groups limp into port, just three ships. She stands on the dock, where one of the ships, a destroyer, drops its gangplank. But the destroyer isn't part of the group that went out with the *Ford* and *Miller*; no, it's her old flagship, the *John Paul Jones*. Her crew files down the gangplank. She recognizes many of the young sailors. Among them is Commander Jane Morris. She is smoking a cigar, the same cigar they shared on the bridge of the *John Paul Jones* those weeks before. Which feel like a lifetime before. When Hunt approaches Morris, her former subordinate walks right past her, as if she doesn't exist. There's no malice in Morris' reaction; rather it is as though Hunt is the ghost and these ghosts are the living. Then, while Hunt is trying to gain Morris' attention, she glimpses a young petty officer coming down the gangplank and onto the dock. Hunt is drawn to him because unlike the other sailors he is wearing his dress whites, the wide bell-bottoms flaring out over his mirror-shined leather shoes. Two chevrons are sewn to his sleeve. His Dixie cup hat balances on his head at a jaunty angle. He can't be more than 25 years old. And although he's a young petty officer, he wears a dizzying array of medals and ribbons, such as the Navy Cross, lesser awards for valor, and several Purple Hearts, to include the one that got him killed. He's a SEAL. He crosses the dock, comes right up to Hunt, and takes her by the hand. He squeezes it three times—

I / LOVE / YOU—just as her father used to do. He looks at her, still holding her hand, still waiting. He is clean-shaven, strong; his torso angles toward his waist in a V. And his palm is soft. She can hardly recognize him. In her memory he is always older, worn down; she never remembered her father's medals and ribbons as shining. But they shine now, spectacularly so. His blue eyes are fixed on hers. She squeezes his hand four times—I / LOVE / YOU / TOO.

He looks at her and says, “You don't have to do this.” Then he drops her hand and walks away.

She calls after him, “Do what?” but he doesn't turn around.

This excerpt appears in the February 2021 issue. [Subscribe to WIRED.](#)

Illustration: Owen Freeman

This is where the dream always ends. Hunt had just woken from it on the morning the *Enterprise* pulled into port. She was still shaken by the question in the dream as she met her crew on the docks of Yokosuka. She caught herself looking around, as if she might see him, or even Morris, wandering among the other sailors as they descended the gangplank. Her crew was young. Most of the officers and enlisted filled positions that were one or two grades senior to their rank, a result of the Navy struggling to account for its most recent losses at sea as well as what in recent years had become perennial manpower shortages. Hunt consoled herself with the idea that if the crew was young, then it was also hungry, and she would take enthusiasm over experience.

The *Enterprise* was scheduled for a week in port after an arduous transit from Fifth Fleet and the Arabian Gulf. Its sister carrier, the *Bush*, had recently suffered the ignominy of losing a pilot over Iranian airspace, and the crew of the *Enterprise* seemed determined to avoid a similar humiliation in the performance of their mission. As to the specifics of that mission, they remained unclear. They knew the Chinese navy possessed an offensive cyber capability that they'd yet to effectively counter, and that this capability reduced their high-tech platforms—whether it be navigation, communications, or weapons guidance systems—to little more than a suite of glitching computers. Nevertheless, they understood that whatever their specific mission was, it would certainly include the more general objective of destroying, or at least neutralizing, the flotilla of Chinese vessels that threatened to destabilize the balance of power in the region.

First, however, they would need to find the Chinese fleet, specifically the *Zheng He* Carrier Battle Group. If the *Wén Rui* incident and the sinking of the *Ford* and *Miller* demonstrated anything, it was that China's cyber capability could effectively black out a vast swath of ocean. While Hunt was having her retirement canceled by Seventh Fleet Headquarters, that same headquarters had scrambled reconnaissance drones across the South China Sea and even the far reaches of the Pacific in an effort to map the disposition of Chinese naval forces and infer their next move. A variety of

drones were tasked, from the latest stealth variants of MQ-4C Tritons, to RQ-4 Global Hawks, to even the CIA's RQ-170 Sentinels, each fully integrated into America's network of satellites. However, as was the case with the F-35 at Bandar Abbas, the Chinese were able to take control of these drones once they came into a certain range, disabling their sensors and controls. The result was that all Hunt had from Seventh Fleet was a circular black hole with a radius of nearly eight hundred nautical miles. This included the waters around Japan, Vietnam, Taiwan, and the Philippines. Somewhere in that black hole was the *Zheng He* and the rest of the Chinese fleet. And she would be expected to find and destroy it.

She made a request to disable all of the avionics in one of her fighter squadrons, VMFA-323, the Death Rattlers, the only Marine squadron aboard the *Enterprise* and the only one that still used the antiquated F/A-18 Hornet airframe. She would be given two days to modify the aircraft in port, and then whatever extra time she could steal once she got underway. She would, in effect, be refashioning one of her squadrons as a “dumb squadron.”

The squadron's commanding officer had stridently objected. He had told Hunt that he wasn't sure all of his pilots were up for this type of flying—without instruments, by the seat of their pants alone. She had dismissed his concerns, not because she didn't think they had merit but because she had little alternative. She knew that when they next fought, they would fight blind.

That was, of course, if she could find the *Zheng He*.

09:00 MAY 21, 2034 (GMT-4)
QUANTICO

Wedge just wanted to go home. Back to San Diego. Back to the beach. Back to 06:00 at the gym, to a 08:00 preflight, to a 09:00 first hop, then lunch, then a second hop at 13:30, then postflight and debrief, followed by drinks at the officers' club and a night spent in a bed that wasn't his own. He wanted to wear his Ray-Bans. He wanted to surf the point at Punta Miramar. He wanted to talk shit to his buddies in the squadron, and then

back that shit up when they did dogfight maneuvers at Fallon Naval Air Station.

What he didn't want?

He didn't want to be in Quantico. He didn't want the master sergeant whom Headquarters Marine Corps had assigned as his “escort while in the WDCMA” to keep following him around. “What the fuck is the WDCMA?” Wedge had asked the humorless master sergeant, who had shit for ribbons except a bunch of drill field commendations and about a dozen Good Conduct Medals.

“Washington, DC, Metro Area, sir,” the master sergeant had said.

“Are you shitting me?”

“Negative, sir.”

In the weeks since Wedge had arrived back in the States, or CONUS as the master sergeant insistently referred to it, the two had had this exchange numerous times. About Wedge's denied request to have dinner with an old college buddy who lived near Dupont Circle (“Are you shitting me?” “Negative, sir.”), or the master sergeant insisting on coming with him to the base theater when he wanted to see a movie (“Are you shitting me?” “Negative, sir.”), and, lastly—and perhaps most bitterly—each time his enforced stay in Quantico was extended by at first a day, then two, then a week, and then another (“Are you *motherfucking* shitting me?” “Negative, sir.”).

The reason, nominally, for Wedge's lengthening stay was a series of debriefings. Within the first week of coming home, he had breezed through meetings with officers from CIA, DIA, NSA, State, and even the National Geospatial-Intelligence Agency. He had explained to them in detail the malfunctions he'd had with the F-35, the series of troubleshooting procedures he'd employed (to include putting a bullet into the avionics —“When all systems became unresponsive, I disabled them manually”—which was met with skeptical looks by the career bureaucrats and defense

contractors), and he had gone on to explain his captivity. Or at least what he could remember of it.

“Tell us a bit more about this Iranian officer.”

“Guy had three fingers on his right hand, a short temper, and kicked the shit out of me. What more do you want to know?”

The bureaucrats scribbled studiously in their notepads.

Wedge was bored. That was the real problem. He spent most of his day sitting around, watching the news. “Thirty-seven ships,” he'd often say aloud, as if from nowhere. Each time he said it he hoped that someone—maybe the buttoned-down master sergeant—would refute him and tell him that none of it had happened; that the *Ford* and *Miller* with all their escorts were still afloat; that the whole thing was a dream, an illusion; that the only reality was American greatness. Wedge knew a number of the now-dead pilots from flight school in Pensacola a decade before. “We got our teeth kicked in,” Wedge would say of the battle, running his tongue over his own missing teeth. On his second week in Quantico, he had a four-hour dental appointment, and it was the dentist who revealed the real reason he was being held on base. After finishing her handiwork, a total of five replaced teeth, she held up the mirror so Wedge could take a look. “What do you think?” she asked. “You'll be in good shape for when they take you over to the White House.”

Another week passed.

So that's what he'd been waiting for, a debriefing at the White House.

The master sergeant explained to Wedge his brush with celebrity while behind bars, even showing him the *#FreeWedge* threads on social media. The president was, after all, a politician, so it seemed little wonder she wanted to have a photo op with Wedge. It was a box she needed to check. But their meeting kept getting delayed. All Wedge had to do was turn on the news to see why. The Chinese fleet had disappeared. Vanished. Vamoose. The SECDEF, the chairman of the joint chiefs, even the national security advisor—that chicken hawk Trent Wisecarver—all of them held press

conferences in which they made thinly veiled threats in response to “Sino aggression.”

The Chinese were watching. They didn't respond.

After weeks of saber rattling, the administration seemed as if it had tired itself out. The first day without a press conference was when Wedge finally received his summons to the White House. On the car ride north from Quantico, he kept checking and rechecking his service alpha uniform the Marine Shop had rush-tailored for him. The president, he was told, was going to present him with the Prisoner of War Medal. She would ask him a few questions, they'd have their picture taken, and he'd be done. As Wedge fiddled with the ribbons on his chest, he kept running his tongue over his new teeth.

“You look good, sir,” the master sergeant said. Wedge said thanks, and then stared out the window.

When they arrived at the West Wing visitor entrance, it seemed as though no one was expecting them. The Secret Service didn't have Wedge in the system for a visit that day. Wedge suggested to the master sergeant that maybe they should get a bite nearby; they could grab sliders and a couple of beers at the Old Ebbitt Grill or the Hay-Adams bar and then come back later. The master sergeant wasn't having it. He kept arguing with the Secret Service uniform division officer, who eventually called his supervisor. This went on for half an hour as phone calls were placed to the Pentagon and Headquarters Marine Corps.

Then Chowdhury walked past. He knew about Wedge's visit and volunteered to escort him inside. The master sergeant would have to wait, as Chowdhury was only authorized to escort one person at a time. While he and Wedge navigated through the cramped West Wing offices, Chowdhury apologetically explained, “Since the blackout none of our systems have come back online properly.” He then found Wedge a seat where he could wait. “I know you're on the schedule for today, but things are pretty fluid at the moment. Let me find out when we're going to get you in.” And then Chowdhury disappeared into a hive of activity. Wedge knew a crisis when he saw one. Staffers hurrying in one direction down the corridor, only to

turn around suddenly and head in the opposite direction. Heated conversations taking place in whispers.

Phones urgently answered. The men hadn't shaved. The women hadn't brushed their hair. People ate at their desks.

“So you're him?” said a man who had crept up next to Wedge, a red binder tucked beneath his arm, his frameless glasses balanced on the tip of his nose, evaluating Wedge as though he were a painting of dubious provenance.

Instinctively, Wedge stood, making a sir sandwich of this introduction. “Yes, sir, Major Chris Mitchell, sir,” he said, as though he was once again an officer candidate on the parade field in Quantico. Trent Wisecarver introduced himself not by name, but by his position, as in “I'm the president's national security advisor,” and then he weakly shook Wedge's hand as though he couldn't muster enough regard for a heartier grip. “Major Mitchell,” he continued, referring to the binder tucked beneath his arm, “you are on the schedule; however, this evening the president has an address to the nation that she's preparing for. So today has gotten a little busy. I must apologize, but I've been instructed to present you with your award instead.” Wisecarver then unceremoniously handed over the red binder, as well as a blue box that contained the medal itself. He paused for a moment, searching, it seemed, for the appropriate words, and mustered a paltry “Congratulations” before excusing himself as he rushed off to his next briefing.

Wedge wandered out of the West Wing to the visitor area, where the master sergeant dutifully waited for him. Neither spoke as they stepped out onto Pennsylvania Avenue and into the public garage where they'd left their government car. The master sergeant didn't ask for the details of Wedge's presidential visit. He seemed to intuit the unceremonious nature with which Wedge had been handled, and as if trying to cheer up the major, he reminded him that the next day they could cut his orders. He was now free to rejoin a squadron. Wedge smiled at this, and as they drove down to Quantico the two of them filled the silence with music from an oldies station. Until that station and every other was interrupted by a public service announcement followed by the president's remarks.

The master sergeant turned up the radio. Wedge stared out the window, into the night.

“My fellow Americans, hours ago our navy and intelligence services reported the appearance of a large Chinese fleet off the coast of Taiwan, an ally of the United States. In the context of recent hostilities with Beijing, this represents a clear and present danger not only to the independence of that island nation but also to our own. Recent military setbacks have limited our options for dealing with this threat. But, rest assured, those options remain ample. To quote the words of our thirty-fifth president, John F. Kennedy, ‘Let every nation know, whether it wishes us well or ill, that we shall pay any price, bear any burden, meet any hardship, support any friend, oppose any foe, in order to assure the survival and the success of liberty.’ This statement proved true during the darkest hours of President Kennedy’s administration, to include the Cuban Missile Crisis. And it proves true today.

“To the citizens and government of the People’s Republic of China, I wish to speak to you directly: Through your cyber weapons you have degraded our ability to offer a more conventional, measured response. The path of war is not one we wish to travel, but if forced, travel it we will. We will honor our commitments to our allies. Turn your ships around, return them to port, respect the freedom of navigation of the seas, and catastrophe may still be avoided. However, a violation of Taiwan’s sovereignty is a red line for the United States. A violation of that red line will be met with overwhelming force at a time and place of our choosing. To stand with our allies and to stand up for ourselves, I have preauthorized the employment of select tactical nuclear weapons to our commanders in the region.”

Wedge turned off the radio.

Traffic was flitting by them on I-95. Here and there, cars had pulled over on the shoulder with their hazard lights flashing into the darkness. Inside, Wedge could see the silhouettes of drivers and passengers leaning forward, listening attentively to the address on the radio. Wedge didn’t need to hear anything more. He understood what was coming.

The master sergeant muttered, “Jesus, tactical nukes,” and then, “I hope they've got their shit wired tight at the White House.”

Wedge only nodded.

They drove a bit more in silence.

Wedge glanced down on his lap, to where he held the red binder with the citation for his Prisoner of War Medal, as well as the blue box that contained the decoration itself.

“Let's see that medal of yours, sir,” said the master sergeant. Wedge opened the box.

It was empty.

Neither he nor the master sergeant knew quite what to say. The master sergeant sat up a little bit straighter in his seat. He affixed his hands firmly at ten and two o'clock on the steering wheel. “No big deal,” he muttered after a moment, glancing once more into the empty box that rested on Wedge's lap. “There must've been an oversight today at the White House. Tomorrow, we'll unfuck it.”

Adapted from [2034: A Novel of the Next World War](#) by Elliot Ackerman and Admiral James Stavridis to be published March 09, 2021, by Penguin Press, an imprint of Penguin Publishing Group, a division of Penguin Random House LLC. Copyright © 2021 by Elliot Ackerman and James Stavridis.

If you buy something using links in our stories, we may earn a commission. This helps support our journalism. [Learn more.](#)

Illustrations by Sam Whitney; Getty Images

This excerpt appears in the February 2021 issue. [Subscribe now.](#)

Let us know what you think about this article. Submit a letter to the editor at mail@wired.com.

This article was downloaded by **calibre** from <https://www.wired.com/story/2034-part-v-sailing-into-darkness/>

| [Section menu](#) | [Main menu](#) |

By [Elliot Ackerman](#) and [Admiral James Stavridis](#)

[Backchannel](#)

02.16.2021 07:00 AM

2034, Part IV: The Spratly Islands

Ambush

“Where will America be after today? In a thousand years it won't even be remembered as a country. It will simply be remembered as a moment. A fleeting moment.”

 A scene with two men at a conference table.

Illustration: Owen Freeman

12:13 APRIL 23, 2034 (GMT+4:30)

ISFAHAN

Qassem Farshad had taken the deal he was offered. Discipline against him had been decisive and swift. In less than a month he was delivered a letter of reprimand for his excesses during the interrogation of the American pilot, followed by an early retirement. When he had asked if there was anyone else he might appeal his case to, the administrative officer who'd been sent to deliver the news showed him the bottom of the page, which held the signature of the old man himself, Major General Mohammad Bagheri, chief of the General Staff of the Armed Forces. When Farshad received the letter, he'd been on suspension at home, at his family's country residence an hour outside of Isfahan. It reminded him of Soleimani's home in Qanat-e Malek. It was peaceful there, quiet.

Farshad tried to settle into a routine. In the first few days he hiked his three miles each morning and began to sort through boxes of notebooks he'd kept throughout his career. He had an idea to write a memoir, maybe something that would be instructive to younger officers. However, it was difficult for him to concentrate. He was afflicted by a phantom itching in his missing leg, something he'd never experienced before. At midday he would break from his attempts at writing and take a picnic lunch to an elm tree that sat in a field on the far end of his property. He would rest with his back to the tree and have a simple lunch: a boiled egg, a piece of bread, some olives. He never finished his meal. His appetite had recently waned, and he would

leave the remains for a pair of squirrels who lived in the tree and who, with each passing day, edged closer and closer to him in search of his scraps.

He remembered and then re-remembered his last exchange with the old general, how Soleimani had wished him a soldier's death. Farshad couldn't help it; he felt as though his outburst in Bandar Abbas had let his father's old friend down. On the other hand, striking a prisoner had never before been grounds for dismissal for a Revolutionary Guards officer. In Iraq, in Afghanistan, in Syria, and in Palestine, all through his career, intelligence work was often done with fists. He knew many who'd ascended into positions of high command by virtue of their brutality alone. But Farshad's superiors had expected more from him. They had told him—in no uncertain terms—that he was the most junior person they could trust. And he had betrayed that trust. Although they might have thought that Farshad had momentarily lost control of himself in the presence of an impertinent American flyer, it was more profound than that.

Farshad hadn't lost control. Far from it.

He had known exactly what he was doing. He had known exactly how important this American was, even if he hadn't understood every detail. What he had known was that by beating this American to a pulp, he was pushing his country closer to war with the same alliance of Western powers that had killed both his own father and the old general. Perhaps neither would be disappointed in me after all, thought Farshad. Perhaps they would be proud of me for taking our people one step closer to the inevitable confrontation with the West that our feckless leaders have long avoided. He thought of himself as seizing an opportunity that fate had thrust before him. But it seemed to have backfired and cost him the twilight of his career.

For days and then weeks, Farshad kept to his routine and eventually the phantom itching in his missing leg began to subside. He lived alone in his family's empty home, hiking his three miles, taking his walk at lunch. Each day, the pair of squirrels who lived in the tree came ever closer, until one of them, whose fur was a very rich shade of brown and who he assumed to be the male (as opposed to the female, whose tail was snowy white), had plucked up enough courage to eat from the palm of Farshad's hand. After lunch he would return home and write through the afternoon. At night he

prepared himself a simple dinner, and then he read in bed. His existence was reduced to this. After a career in command of hundreds and at times thousands of men, it surprised him how he enjoyed being responsible for himself alone.

No one stopped by. The phone never rang. It was only him.

So the weeks passed, until one morning he noticed that the single road that bordered his property was filled with military transports, even the occasional tracked vehicle. Their exhausts belched smoke. Beyond the line of trees that partially screened his house he could see them stuck in a traffic jam of their own creation as officers and noncommissioned officers barked orders at their drivers, trying to move things along. They seemed in a frenzy to reach their destination. Later that morning, as Farshad was leisurely filling a notebook with his memories, the phone rang, startling him so much that his pen skipped across the page.

“Hello,” he answered.

“Is this Brigadier Qassem Farshad?” came a voice he didn't recognize.

“Who is this?”

The voice introduced itself quickly, as though its name were designed to be forgotten, and then informed the brigadier that the General Staff of the Armed Forces had ordered a mobilization of retired and reserve officers. Farshad was then given the address of a mustering office. The building was in a nondescript part of Isfahan, far from the military's power centers in Tehran where he'd spent much of his career.

Farshad finished transcribing the particulars of where he was to report, leaving his notes on a scrap of paper. He felt tempted to ask the voice for details about whatever incident had precipitated this mobilization, but he decided against it. He thought that he knew, or at least had an instinct. When Farshad asked if there was anything else, the voice said no and wished him well.

Catch Every Chapter in This Series

Sign up to automatically receive all six installments of 2034 in your inbox.

Your email

Will be used in accordance with our [Privacy Policy](#).

Farshad set down the phone. He had a radio upstairs. He could've turned it on to find out specifically what had happened, but he didn't want to, at least not yet. It was midday and he wanted to pack up his lunch, take his walk, and sit beneath his tree, as had become his custom. Farshad knew that if he didn't report for duty there'd be no recourse. No one would dare say he hadn't done enough for the Islamic Republic.

A few weeks ago, his choice would've been an easy one; he would've packed his things and happily marched off to another war. But, surprisingly enough to him, he had come to appreciate this quieter life. He had even begun to imagine that he might settle here, in the country, with some measure of contentment.

He left the house for his walk. His stride was loose, his pace quick.

By the time Farshad reached his familiar tree, he was famished. He'd hiked nearly twice his usual distance. It was the first time in a long time that he could remember having such an appetite. With his back against the trunk of the tree, he ate. He savored each bite, angling his head upward as the blotchy sunlight filtered through the canopy of branches and fell onto his smiling face.

He was finished with his meal and on the cusp of a nap when the familiar pair of squirrels approached. He could feel the one, darker squirrel brush against his leg. When he opened his eyes, the other, smaller squirrel, the female with the snow-white tail, lingered not far behind, watching. Farshad brushed a few breadcrumbs off his shirt and placed them in his palm; it was the best he could do. The darker squirrel perched on Farshad's wrist while it dipped its head into Farshad's cupped palm. Farshad was amazed. He didn't think it possible that anything, particularly a squirrel, could be so unafraid of him, so trusting.

In his amazement, Farshad didn't notice that the dark squirrel was hardly satisfied by meager crumbs. The squirrel twitched its head toward Farshad and then, realizing that nothing else would be offered, sunk its teeth into Farshad's palm.

Farshad didn't flinch. He snatched the dark squirrel around the body and squeezed. The squirrel's mate, who had been waiting at a more cautious distance, began to run in frantic circles. Farshad squeezed harder. He couldn't stop, even had he wanted to. And a part of him did want to stop, the same part of him that wanted to stay here, under this tree. Nevertheless, he squeezed so hard that his own blood, the blood from the bite, began to seep out from between his fingers. The dark squirrel's body struggled and twitched.

Until it didn't—until to Farshad it felt as though he were squeezing an empty sponge. He stood and dropped the dead squirrel by the roots of the tree.

Its mate ran to it and glanced up at Farshad, who looked over his shoulder in the direction from which he'd come. He walked slowly back to the house, back to the slip of paper with an address on it.

06:37 APRIL 23, 2034 (GMT+8)
BEIJING

Lin Bao's new job, as the deputy commander for naval operations to the Central Military Commission, was a bureaucratic morass. Although the ministry was on a war footing, it only increased the intensity and frequency of the interminable staff meetings he needed to attend. Lin Bao often saw Minister Chiang at these meetings, but the minister had never again brought up Lin Bao's request for command of the *Zheng He*, let alone any command. And Lin Bao had no license to raise the topic. On the surface his job was suitable and important, but privately he sensed that he was a long way from a return to sea duty. Ever since the *Zheng He* Carrier Battle Group's great victory over the Americans, a panic had begun to grow within Lin Bao.

He couldn't pinpoint it to one thing, but rather to a collection of annoyances, the mundane trivialities that can, at times, make life unbearable. As the military attaché to the United States, his position had been singular and of the greatest import. Now, while his nation faced its greatest military crisis in a generation, he was stuck commuting each morning to the Defense Ministry. He no longer had the driver he'd enjoyed in Washington. When his wife needed the car to drop their daughter at school, he was forced to carpool into work. Sandwiched in the back seat of a minivan between two short officers who spoke of nothing but basketball and whose careers had dead-ended long ago, he could not imagine ever standing on the bridge of his own carrier.

These weeks had brought only exaltation for Ma Qiang. It had been announced that for his actions he would receive the Order of August First, the greatest possible military honor. Once the award was conferred on Ma Qiang, Lin Bao knew it was highly unlikely that he would ever take command of the *Zheng He*. Whatever disappointment he felt was, however, tempered by his appreciation that their recent undertaking against the Americans had initiated events beyond any one person's control.

And so Lin Bao continued his staff work. He continued to carpool into the ministry with officers he deemed inferior to himself. He never again brought up his ambition for command to Minister Chiang, and he could feel the mundane ferocity of time passing. Until it was soon interrupted—as it always is—by an unanticipated event.

The unanticipated event was a phone call to Lin Bao that came in from the South Sea Fleet Headquarters in Zhanjiang. That morning, a reconnaissance drone had spotted “a significant American naval force” sailing southward at approximately twelve knots toward the Spratly Islands, along a route that was often used for their so-called “freedom-of-navigation patrols.” Immediately after the drone observed the American ships, communications between it and the South Sea Fleet Headquarters cut off. It was the commander of the South Sea Fleet himself who had contacted the Central Military Commission. His question was simple: Should he risk sending out another drone?

Before Lin Bao could offer a thought on the matter, there was a slight commotion in his workspace as Minister Chiang entered. The mid-level officers and junior sailors who served as clerks sprang to attention as the minister breezed past them, while Lin Bao himself stood, clutching his telephone's receiver. He began to explain the situation, but Minister Chiang raised his outstretched palm, as if to save him the trouble. He already knew about the drone and what it'd seen. And he already knew his response, snatching the telephone's receiver so that now Lin Bao was only privy to one side of the conversation.

“Yes ... yes ...” muttered Minister Chiang impatiently into the line. “I've already received those reports.”

Then the inaudible response.

“No,” answered Minister Chiang, “another flight is out of the question.”

Again, the inaudible response.

“Because you'll lose that flight as well,” Minister Chiang replied tersely. “We're preparing your orders now and will have them out within the hour. I'd recommend you recall all personnel on shore leave or otherwise. Plan to be busy.” Minister Chiang hung up. He took a single, exasperated breath. His shoulders slumped forward as if he were profoundly tired. He was like a father whose child has, once again, bitterly disappointed him. Then he looked up and, with a transformed expression, as if energized for whatever task lay ahead, ordered Lin Bao to follow him.

They walked briskly through the vast corridors of the Defense Ministry, a small retinue of Minister Chiang's staff trailing behind. Lin Bao wasn't certain what Minister Chiang's countermove would be if it wasn't the deployment of another reconnaissance drone. They reached the same windowless conference room where they'd first met.

Minister Chiang assumed his position at the head of the table, leaning backward in his cushioned swivel chair, his palms resting on his chest, his fingers laced together. “I suspected this was what the Americans would do,” he began. “It is disappointingly predictable ...” One of the underlings on

Minister Chiang's staff was setting up the secure video teleconference, and Lin Bao felt certain he knew with whom they'd soon be speaking. "By my estimation, the Americans have sent two carrier battle groups—the *Ford* and the *Miller* would be my guess—to sail right through our South China Sea. They are doing this for one reason and one reason alone: to prove that they still can. Yes, this provocation is certainly predictable. For decades, they have sent their 'freedom-of-navigation patrols' through our waters despite our protests. For just as long they have refused to recognize our claim over Chinese Taipei and insulted us in the UN with their insistence on calling it Taiwan. All the while we've endured these provocations. The country of Clint Eastwood, of Dwayne Johnson, of LeBron James, it can't imagine a nation like ours would submit to such humiliations for any other reason but weakness ...

"But our strength is what it has always been—our judicious patience. The Americans are incapable of behaving patiently. They change their government and their policies as often as the seasons. Their dysfunctional civil discourse is unable to deliver an international strategy that endures for more than a handful of years. They're governed by their emotions, by their blithe morality and belief in their precious indispensability. This is a fine disposition for a nation known for making movies, but not for a nation to survive as we have through the millennia. And where will America be after today? I believe in a thousand years it won't even be remembered as a country. It will simply be remembered as a moment. A fleeting moment."

Minister Chiang sat with his palms on the table, waiting. Across from him was the video teleconference, which hadn't yet established its secure connection. He stared at the blank screen. His concentration was intense, as if willing an image of his own future to appear. And then the screen turned on. Ma Qiang stood on the bridge of the *Zheng He*, exactly as he'd done six weeks before. The only difference was the yellow, gold, and red ribbon with a star in its center fastened above the pocket of his fire-resistant coveralls: the Order of August First.

"Admiral Ma Qiang," the minister began formally, "a reconnaissance flight from our South Sea Fleet has gone missing approximately three hundred nautical miles east of your current position." Ma Qiang straightened up in

the frame, his jaw set. It was obvious he understood the implications of such a disappearance. The minister continued, “Our entire constellation of satellites are now under your command. The Central Military Commission grants you all contingent authorizations.”

Ma Qiang nodded his head slowly, as if in deference to the great scope of the mission he was now set upon, which Lin Bao implicitly understood was no less than the destruction of two US carrier battle groups.

“Good luck.”

Ma Qiang nodded once again.

The connection switched off and the screen went blank. Although the conference room was far from empty, with various staff members entering and exiting, it was only Lin Bao and Minister Chiang sitting at the table. The minister stroked his smooth round chin, and for the first time that morning Lin Bao detected a hint of uncertainty in his expression.

“Don't look at me like that,” said Minister Chiang.

Lin Bao averted his eyes. Perhaps his expression had betrayed his thoughts, which were that he was observing a man who had condemned thousands of other men to their deaths. Did any of them really think that their navy, despite its advanced cyber capability, was up to the task of destroying two US carrier battle groups? The *Gerald R. Ford* and *Doris Miller* sailed with a combined force of forty vessels. Destroyers armed with hypersonic missiles. Utterly silent attack submarines. Semisubmersible frigates. Guided missile cruisers with small, unmanned targeting drones and long-range land-attack hypersonic missiles. Each possessed the latest technology manned by the world's most highly trained crews, all of it watched over by a vast constellation of satellites with deep offensive and defensive cyber capabilities. Nobody knew this better than Lin Bao, whose entire career had centered on his understanding of the United States Navy. He also understood the United States itself, the nation's character. It was woefully misguided for the leaders of his country to believe diplomatic niceties could de-escalate a crisis in which one of their allies had taken an American pilot prisoner and in which their own navy had destroyed three American ships.

Did leaders like Minister Chiang really believe that the Americans would simply cede freedom of navigation in the South China Sea? American morality, that slippery sensibility, which had so often led that country astray, would demand a response. Their reaction of returning with two carrier battle groups was completely predictable.

Minister Chiang insisted that Lin Bao sit beside him while all through that day a procession of subordinates entered and exited the conference room, receiving orders, issuing updates. The morning extended into the afternoon. The plan took shape. The *Zheng He* maneuvered into a blocking position south of the Spratly Island Chain, deploying in attack formation toward the last recorded position of the *Ford* and *Miller*. The American carrier battle groups would in all likelihood be able to get off a single salvo of weaponry before the *Zheng He* could disable their guidance systems. After that, the proverbial elephant would be blind. The American smart weapons would no longer be smart, not even dumb; they'd be brain-dead. Then the *Zheng He*, along with three surface action groups, would strike the *Ford* and *Miller*.

That had been the plan.

But by late afternoon, there was still no sign of the Americans.

Ma Qiang was on the video teleconference again, updating Minister Chiang as to the disposition of his forces, which at that moment were deployed in a racetrack formation extending over dozens of nautical miles. As Ma Qiang spoke of current conditions at sea, Lin Bao glanced surreptitiously at his watch.

“Why are you looking at your watch?” snapped Minister Chiang, interrupting the briefing.

Lin Bao felt his face turn red.

“Do you have somewhere else to be?”

“No, Comrade Minister. Nowhere else to be.”

Minister Chiang nodded back toward Ma Qiang, who continued on with his briefing, while Lin Bao settled exhaustedly into his chair. His carpool had left fifteen minutes before. He had no idea how he would get home.

04:27 APRIL 26, 2034 (GMT+5:30)
NEW DELHI

The phone rang. “Are you up?”

“I’m up now.”

“It’s bad, Sandy.”

“What’s bad?” he asked Hendrickson, swallowing the dryness from his throat as he rubbed his eyes, his vision slowly coming into focus so he could read the digital display of his alarm clock.

“The *Ford* and the *Miller*, they’re gone.”

“What do you mean *gone*?”

“They got the drop on us, or shut us down, or I don’t even know how to describe it. Reports are nothing worked. We were blind. When we launched our planes, their avionics froze, their navigation systems glitched out and were then overridden. Pilots couldn’t eject. Missiles wouldn’t fire. Dozens of our aircraft plunged into the water. Then they came at us with everything. A carrier, frigates and destroyers, diesel and nuclear submarines, swarms of unmanned torpedo boats, hypersonic cruise missiles with total stealth, offensive cyber. We’re still piecing it all together. The whole thing happened middle of last night ... Christ, Sandy, she was right.”

“Who was right?”

“Sarah—Sarah Hunt. I saw her weeks ago when I was in Yokosuka.” Chowdhury knew that the board of inquiry had cleared Hunt of all culpability in the Battle of Mischief Reef and the loss of her flotilla, but he also knew the Navy had wanted to consign her defeat to a fluke. That would be far easier than taking a hard look at the circumstances that led to it. It

would now be impossible for the Navy—or the nation—to ignore a disaster on this scale. Thirty-seven warships destroyed. Thousands of sailors perished.

This excerpt appears in the February 2021 issue. [Subscribe to WIRED.](#)

Illustration: Owen Freeman

“How did we do?” Chowdhury asked tentatively. “Did our long-range air score any hits? How many of theirs did we sink?”

“None,” said Hendrickson.

“None?”

The line went silent for a moment. “I’ve heard that we might have scored a hit on their carrier, the *Zheng He*, but we didn’t sink any of their ships.”

“My God,” said Chowdhury. “How’s Wisecarver reacting?”

He was up now, his bedside lamp on, stepping into each leg of his trousers, which he’d draped over the back of a chair. He’d arrived at these bland quarters in the embassy’s visitors’ annex two days before. While Chowdhury dressed, Hendrickson explained that the news hadn’t yet leaked to the public: One of the benefits of the blackout the Chinese had employed was that it allowed the administration to control the news, or at least to control it until the Chinese used that information against them. Which they had, strangely, not yet done.

Hendrickson explained that the White House had succumbed to panic. “Jesus, what will the country say?” had been the president’s response on hearing the news. Trent Wisecarver had contacted NORAD and elevated the threat level to DEFCON 2, with a request to the president to elevate it to DEFCON 1. In an emergency meeting of the National Security Council he had also requested preemptive authorization for a tactical nuclear launch against the *Zheng He* Carrier Battle Group, provided it could be found and targeted. Remarkably, his request had not been rejected outright. The

president, who only days before had wanted to de-escalate tensions, was now entertaining such a strike.

De-escalation had been the entire reason the administration dispatched Chowdhury to New Delhi. Negotiations surrounding the release of Major Chris “Wedge” Mitchell had progressed to the point where the Iranians agreed to transport him to their embassy in India, and a prisoner swap seemed imminent. Chowdhury believed—and the analysts at CIA backed him up—that the sole reason the Iranians were dragging their feet on the major's release was because they wanted his wounds to heal a bit more, particularly his face. The last contact Chowdhury had with the Iranians—a contact brokered through officials at India's Foreign Ministry—they'd assured him that Major Mitchell would be released within a week, as he now explained to Hendrickson. “A week's too long,” Hendrickson replied. “Once the Iranians learn what's happened—if they don't know already—they'll take Major Mitchell back to Tehran. You've got to get him out now, or at least try. That's why I'm calling—” There was a pause on the line as Chowdhury wondered how Hendrickson could possibly expect him to accomplish such a task. Then Hendrickson added, “Sandy, we're at war.” The words might once have sounded melodramatic, but now they didn't; they had become a statement of fact.

04:53 APRIL 26, 2034 (GMT+9)
YOKOSUKA NAVAL BASE

Dawn vanished the fog as the day broke bright and pure. Three ships on the horizon. A destroyer. A frigate. A cruiser.

They were sailing slowly, barely moving in fact. The frigate and cruiser were very close together, the destroyer a little further off. This view from Sarah Hunt's window early that morning was a curious sight. Her flight to San Diego was scheduled for later that day. As she watched the three ships limping closer, she wondered if they would pull into port by the time she left. What she saw didn't make much sense to her. Where were the *Ford* and *Miller*?

A red flare went up, followed by one and then two more. On the deck of the destroyer was a signal lamp; it began to flash.

Flash, flash, flash ... flash ... flash ... flash ... flash, flash, flash ...

Three short ... three long ... three short ...

Hunt recognized the message immediately. She ran out of her barracks room toward Seventh Fleet Headquarters.

05:23 APRIL 26, 2034 (GMT+8)
BEIJING

Victory had been total. Beyond what they could have hoped for.

It almost unsettled them.

It had been past midnight when Ma Qiang reported contact with the vanguard of destroyers from the *Ford* Battle Group. He was able to neutralize their weapons systems and communications with the same offensive cyber capability his fleet had employed weeks before to great effect near Mischief Reef. This allowed a dozen of his stealthy unmanned torpedo boats to close within a kilometer of the vanguard and launch their ordnance. Which they did, to devastating effect. Three direct hits on three American destroyers. They sank in under ten minutes, vanished. That had been the opening blow, delivered in darkness. When the news was reported in the Defense Ministry, the cheers were raucous.

After that, all through the night their blows fell in quick succession. A single flight of four Shenyang J-15s launched from the *Zheng He* scored a total of fifteen direct hits divided between three destroyers, two cruisers, and a frigate, sinking all six. A half dozen torpedo-armed Kamov helicopters launched from three separate Jiangkai II-class frigates scored four out of six hits, one of which struck the *Ford* itself, disabling its rudder. This would be the first of many strikes against both American carriers. Those carriers responded by launching their aircraft while the surface ships responded by launching their ordnance, but they all fired blindly, into not only the darkness of that night but the more profound darkness of what they could no longer see, reliant as they had become on technologies that failed to serve them. Chinese cyber dominance of the American forces was complete. A highly sophisticated artificial intelligence capability allowed

the *Zheng He* to employ its cyber tools at precisely the right moment to infiltrate US systems by use of a high-frequency delivery mechanism. Stealth was a secondary tool, though not unimportant. In the end, it was the massive discrepancy in offensive cyber capabilities—an invisible advantage—that allowed the *Zheng He* to consign a far larger force to the depths of the South China Sea.

For four hours, a steady stream of reports filtered in from the bridge of the *Zheng He* back to the Defense Ministry. The blows struck by Ma Qiang's command fell with remarkable rapidity. Equally remarkable was that they fell at such little cost. Two hours into the battle, they hadn't lost a single ship or aircraft. Then, the unimaginable happened, an event Lin Bao never thought he would see in his lifetime. At 04:37 a single Yuan-class diesel-electric submarine slipped toward the hull of the *Miller*, flooded its torpedo tubes, and fired a spread at point-blank range.

After impact, it took only eleven minutes for the carrier to sink. When this news arrived, there wasn't any cheering in the Defense Ministry as there'd been before. Only silence. Minister Chiang, who had sat diligently at the head of the conference table all through the night, stood and headed for the door. Lin Bao, as the second-most-senior officer in the room, felt obliged to ask him where he was going and when he might return—the battle wasn't over yet, he reminded the minister. The *Ford* was out there, injured but still a threat. Minister Chiang turned back toward Lin Bao, and his expression, which was usually so exuberant, appeared tired, contorted by the fatigue he'd hidden these many weeks.

“I'm only stepping out for some fresh air,” he said, glancing at his watch. “The sun will be up soon. It's a whole new day and I'd like to watch the dawn.”

05:46 APRIL 26, 2034 (GMT+5:30)
NEW DELHI

After Hendrickson hung up with him, Chowdhury knew who he needed to call, though it was a call he didn't wish to place. He quickly calculated the time difference. Though it was late, his mother would still be up.

“Sandeep, I thought I wasn't going to hear from you for a few days?” she began, sounding slightly annoyed.

“I know,” he said exhaustedly. And his exhaustion wasn't as much from his lack of sleep, or even his gathering realization of how dire circumstances had become for the Seventh Fleet, as it was from having to apologize to his mother. He'd said he wasn't going to phone on this trip. Yet when he needed her, as he did now, she had always been there. “There's been a problem at work,” said Chowdhury, pausing dramatically, as if to give his mother's imagination sufficient time to conjure what a “problem at work” currently meant for her son, given the circumstances. “Can you put me in touch with your brother?”

The line went silent, as he knew it would.

There was a reason Chowdhury hadn't referred to retired vice admiral Anand Patel as “my uncle,” but instead as “your brother.” Because Anand Patel had never been an uncle to Chowdhury, and he hadn't been much of a brother to his sister Lakshmi. The cause of their estrangement was an arranged marriage between a teenage Lakshmi and a young naval officer—a friend of her older brother's—that ended in an affair, a marriage-for-love to Chowdhury's father, who had been a medical student with plans to study at Columbia University, which led to Lakshmi's departure for the United States while the family honor—at least according to her elder brother—was left in tatters. But that was all a long time ago. Long enough that it'd been twenty years since the young naval officer who was meant to be Lakshmi's husband died in a helicopter crash, and ten years since Sandy's father, the oncologist, had died of his own cancer. In the meantime, Lakshmi's brother, Sandy's uncle, had climbed the ranks of India's naval service, ascending to the admiralty, a distinction that was never spoken of in the Chowdhury household but that now might prove useful as Sandy scrambled to play the inside hand that would assure Major Mitchell's release. That is, if his mother would oblige. “I don't understand, Sandeep,” she said. “Doesn't our government have contacts in the Indian government? Isn't this the sort of thing that gets worked out in official channels?”

Chowdhury explained to his mother that, yes, this was the sort of thing that was usually worked out in official channels, and that, yes, their government

did have any number of contacts inside the Indian government and military—to include certain intelligence assets that Chowdhury didn't mention. However, despite these formidable resources, oftentimes the key to severing the Gordian knot of diplomacy was a personal connection, a familial connection.

“That man is no longer family of mine,” she snapped back at him.

“Mom, why do you think they picked me, *Sandeep Chowdhury*, to come here? Plenty of others could have been given this assignment. They gave it to me because our family is from here.”

“What would your father say to that? You're American. They should send you because you're the best man for the job, not because of who your parents—”

“Mom,” he said, cutting her off. He allowed the line to go silent for a beat. “I need your help.”

“Okay,” she said. “Do you have a pen?” He did.

She recited her brother's phone number by heart.

09:13 APRIL 26, 2034 (GMT+5:30)
NEW DELHI

The swelling on his face had gone down considerably. His ribs were doing much better. When Wedge took a deep breath it no longer hurt. There were some scars, sure, but nothing too bad, nothing that would turn off the girls he imagined hanging on his every word in the bars around Miramar Air Station when he made it home with his stories. A few days before, they'd given him a clean change of clothes, added some sort of stringy meat to his diet, and placed him on a government airplane with stewardesses, fruit juice, and bagged peanuts—all he could eat. He hadn't been alone, of course. A plainclothes entourage of guards with pistols brandished in their waistbands and mirrored sunglasses masking their eyes kept a watch over him. When Wedge clownishly tossed a few of the peanuts into the air and

caught them with his mouth, the guards even laughed, though Wedge couldn't be certain whether they were laughing at or with him.

The plane had landed in darkness, a choice he assumed was intentional. Then he was whisked from the airport in a panel van with blacked-out windows. No one told him anything until late that night, when he was getting ready for bed in the carpeted room where they'd placed him, more like a drab hotel room than a cell, and nicer than anything Wedge had seen for weeks. Still, no one told him where he'd been flown to. All they told him was that tomorrow a representative from the Red Cross would pay a visit. That night, excited by the prospect, he hardly slept. The image of an attractive nurse, of the type that entertained GIs at USO tours in another era, relentlessly came to mind. He could see her generically beautiful face, her white uniform, her stockings, the cap with the little red cross. He knew that wasn't how Red Cross women looked these days, but he couldn't help it. His room was empty, though he assumed a guard was posted outside his door, and in the emptiness of that room his imagination became ever more expansive as he fantasized about this meeting, his first contact with the outside world in nearly two months. He could see her lipsticked mouth forming the reassuring words: *I'll get you home.*

When his door opened the next morning and a slight Indian man appeared, his disappointment was acute.

09:02 APRIL 27, 2034 (GMT+4:30)
ISFAHAN

At the Second Army's administrative center nobody knew for certain what had happened in the South China Sea. The General Staff of the Armed Forces had issued a nationwide mobilization order; the country was going to war, or was at least on the brink of war, yet no one could say exactly why. When leaving his family's home, Farshad thought of wearing his uniform but decided against it. He was no longer a brigadier in the Revolutionary Guards, let alone a brigadier in the elite Quds Force. He was a civilian now, and even though it had only been a few weeks the break felt permanent—less a break, more an amputation. Whether this amputation was reversible Farshad would soon discover. He was waiting in a line that extended down a corridor on the third floor of this vast administrative

annex. He was, he guessed, the oldest person in the line by several decades. He could feel the others stealing glances at this man with all the scars and three fingers on his right hand.

After less than an hour, he was escorted out of the line and up a set of stairs to an office on the fourth floor. "Now wait here," said a corporal, who spoke to Farshad as though he outranked him. The corporal stepped into the office only to emerge moments later and wave Farshad in.

It was a spacious corner office. Behind the large oak desk were a pair of crossed flags; the first was the flag of the Islamic Republic and the second that of the army. A uniformed man, a colonel in the administrative service, approached Farshad with his hand outstretched. His palm was smooth and his uniform had been starched and ironed so many times that it shined with a metallic patina. The colonel asked for the old brigadier, the hero of the Golan Heights, the recipient of the order of Fath, to sit and join him for tea. The corporal set the glasses out, first in front of Farshad and then in front of the colonel.

"It is an honor to have you here," said the colonel between sips of tea.

Farshad shrugged. An obsequious exchange wasn't the point of his visit. Not wanting to appear impolite, he muttered, "You have a nice office."

"I'm sure you've enjoyed nicer."

"I was a field commander," Farshad answered, shaking his head. "I can't remember ever really having an office." Then he took another sip of tea, finishing his glass in a single gulp and placing it loudly on the tray, as if to indicate that the pleasantries were over and Farshad wanted to get down to business.

From a drawer, the colonel removed a manila envelope and slid it across the desk. "This arrived late last night from Tehran via courier. I was told if you appeared here to hand it to you personally." Farshad opened the envelope: It contained a single document printed on thick stock, riddled with calligraphy, seals, and signatures.

“It is a commission as a lieutenant commander in the navy?”

“I was instructed to convey that Major General Bagheri, the chief of the General Staff of the Armed Forces, has, himself, asked that you consider accepting this commission.”

“I was a brigadier before,” said Farshad as he dropped the letter of commission on the colonel's desk.

To this, the colonel had no response.

“Why are we mobilizing?” asked Farshad.

“I don't know,” replied the colonel. “Like you, I don't have a full explanation, only my orders at this point.” Then he took another envelope from his desk and handed it to Farshad. It contained a travel itinerary for a flight to Damascus with a transfer to Russia's naval base in the Syrian port city of Tartus, where he was to report for “liaison duties.” Farshad couldn't tell if the assignment was legitimate or designed as an insult. That confusion must have shown in his expression: The colonel began to explain how from “an administrative standpoint” it would be very difficult to reappoint a reprimanded officer to a commensurate rank within the same branch of the armed forces. “I happen to know,” the colonel continued, “that the senior ranks of the Revolutionary Guards are oversubscribed. Your service to the Islamic Republic is needed; this is the only vacancy that can be afforded to you.” The colonel reached into his drawer again and removed a pair of shoulder boards embroidered with the gold piping of a navy lieutenant commander. He placed them on the desk between himself and Farshad.

Farshad stared contemptuously at the rank, which was a demotion for him three times over. Had it come to this? If he wanted a role in the impending conflict, would he have to prostrate himself in this way, and not even for a frontline assignment but for some auxiliary job as a liaison with the Russians? And to be a sailor? He didn't even like boats. Soleimani had never had to suffer such an indignity, nor had his father. Farshad stood and faced the colonel, his jaw set, his hands balled into fists. He didn't know

what he should do, but he did know what his father and Soleimani would have told him to do.

Farshad gestured for the colonel to hand him a pen, so that he could sign the acceptance of his commission. Then he gathered up his orders and his itinerary to Tartus and turned to leave. “Lieutenant Commander,” the colonel said as Farshad headed toward the door. “Forgetting something?” He held up the shoulder boards. Farshad took them and again made for the door.

“Aren't you forgetting something else, Lieutenant Commander?” Farshad looked back blankly.

Then he realized. He struggled to control a familiar rage from deep in his stomach, one that on other occasions had spurred him to violence. This fool in his over-starched uniform, with his corner office that he never left. This fool who'd no doubt gone from cushy assignment to cushy assignment, all the while posing as though he were a real soldier, as though he knew what fighting and killing were. Farshad wanted to choke him, to squeeze him by the neck until his lips turned blue and his head hung limply by the stump of his neck.

But he didn't. He buried that desire in a place where he could later retrieve it. Instead he stood up straight, at attention. With his three-fingered right hand, Lieutenant Commander Qassem Farshad saluted the administrative colonel.

Adapted from [2034: A Novel of the Next World War](#) by Elliot Ackerman and Admiral James Stavridis to be published March 09, 2021, by Penguin Press, an imprint of Penguin Publishing Group, a division of Penguin Random House LLC. Copyright © 2021 by Elliot Ackerman and James Stavridis.

If you buy something using links in our stories, we may earn a commission. This helps support our journalism. [Learn more.](#)

Illustrations by Sam Whitney; Getty Images

This excerpt appears in the February 2021 issue. [Subscribe now.](#)

Let us know what you think about this article. Submit a letter to the editor at mail@wired.com.

This article was downloaded by **calibre** from <https://www.wired.com/story/2034-part-iv-spratly-islands-ambush/>

| [Section menu](#) | [Main menu](#) |

By [Elliot Ackerman](#) and [Admiral James Stavridis](#)

[Backchannel](#)

02.09.2021 07:00 AM

2034, Part III: One Left to Tell the Tale

“When the planes didn’t come in straight for the attack, a collective silence fell over the crew, like a breath sucked in. Why didn’t they finish the job?”


jet flying over water toward a ship

Illustration: Owen Freeman

11:01 MARCH 13, 2034 (GMT+8)

SOUTH CHINA SEA

They charged out of the east, two silvery flashes on the horizon, and made an orbit around the badly wounded *John Paul Jones*. Nearly half the crew, more than one hundred sailors, had perished since that morning, either incinerated in the blast from the pair of successive torpedo impacts or entombed in the flooded compartments belowdecks that their shipmates had been forced to secure with them still trapped inside. There were very few wounded, mostly dead, as was usually the case in naval engagements, where there was no battlefield for the injured to rest upon, only the consuming sea.

When the two planes didn't come in straight for the attack, a collective silence fell over the crew, like a breath sucked in. Within that breath was a fleeting hope that these planes had been sent from Yokosuka, or perhaps launched from a friendly carrier dispatched to their aid. But as soon as the crew of the *John Paul Jones* glimpsed their wings, which were laden with munitions, and observed that the two aircraft kept a cautious distance, they knew they weren't friendly.

But why didn't they strike? Why didn't they drop their ordnance and finish the job?

Captain Sarah Hunt couldn't waste her time on speculation. Her full attention remained where it had been since the first torpedo hit the day before. She needed to keep her flagship afloat. And it was, sadly, her ship

now. Commander Morris hadn't been seen since the second impact. Hunt hadn't heard from the *Levin* or *Chung-Hoon* either. She'd only watched, helplessly, as each was crippled and then sunk. This was the fate that would soon befall her and the surviving members of her crew. Although they'd contained most of the fires on the *John Paul Jones*, they were taking on more water than they could pump out. As the weight of the water contorted the steel hull, it creaked mournfully, like a wounded beast, as minute by minute it came closer to buckling.

Hunt stood on the bridge. She tried to occupy herself—checking and rechecking their inoperable radios, dispatching runners for updates from damage control, replotting their position on an analog chart, since anything that required a GPS had failed. She did this so her crew wouldn't despair at their captain's inactivity and so that she herself wouldn't have to imagine the water slipping over the mast. She glanced up, at the twin attack planes from the *Zheng He*. How she wished they would stop taunting her, that they would stop their impudent circling, drop their ordnance, and allow her to go down with her ship.

“Ma'am ... ” interjected one of the radiomen standing beside her, as he pointed toward the horizon.

She glanced up.

The flight of two had changed their angle of attack. They were darting toward the *John Paul Jones*, flying low and fast, staggered in echelon. When the sun glinted off their wings, Hunt imagined it was their cannons firing. She grimaced, but no impacts came. The flight of two was closing the distance between them. The weapon systems on the *John Paul Jones* had been taken out of action. On the bridge there was silence. Her command—the hierarchy that was her ship and its crew—it all melted away in these, their final moments. The radioman, who couldn't have been more than 19, glanced up at her, and she, surprising herself, placed her arm around him. The flight of two was so close now, so low, that she could observe the slight undulation of their wings as they passed through the uneven air. In a blink their ordnance would drop.

Hunt shut her eyes.

A noise like thunder—a boom.

But nothing happened.

Hunt glanced upward. The two planes turned aerobatic corkscrews around each other, climbing higher and higher still, losing and finding themselves in striations of cloud. Then they descended again, passing a hundred feet or less above the surface of the ocean, flying slowly, right above stall speed. As they passed in front of the bridge, the lead plane was so close that Hunt could see the silhouette of the pilot. Then he dipped his wing—a salute, which Hunt believed was the message he'd been sent there to deliver.

The planes ascended and flew back the way they came.

The ship's bridge remained silent.

Then there was a crackle of static. For the first time in more than a day, one of their radios turned on.

12:06 MARCH 13, 2034 (GMT+8)
BEIJING

The video teleconference shut off. The screen withdrew into the ceiling. Lin Bao and Minister Chiang sat alone at the vast conference table.

“Do you think your friend Admiral Ma Qiang is upset with me?”

The question took Lin Bao off guard. He never imagined that someone in Minister Chiang's position would concern himself with the emotional state of a subordinate. Not knowing how to answer, Lin Bao pretended that he hadn't heard, which caused Minister Chiang to ruminate a bit about why he'd asked.

Catch Every Chapter in This Series

Sign up to automatically receive all six installments of 2034 in your inbox.

Your email

SUBMIT

Will be used in accordance with our [Privacy Policy](#).

“Ma Qiang is an excellent commander, decisive, efficient, even cruel. But his effectiveness can also be his weakness. He is an attack dog only. Like so many military officers, he doesn't understand nuance. By sparing the *John Paul Jones*, he believes that I've denied him a prize. However, he doesn't understand the true purpose of his mission.” Minister Chiang arched an eyebrow. What the true purpose of that mission *was* hung in the air as an unanswered question, one that Lin Bao wouldn't dare ask aloud but instead asked through his silence, so that Minister Chiang continued, “Tell me, Lin Bao, you studied in the West. You must've learned the story of Aristodemus.”

Lin Bao nodded. He knew the story of Aristodemus, that famous Spartan who was the sole survivor of the Battle of Thermopylae. He'd learned it at the Kennedy School, in a seminar pompously titled “The History of War” taught by a Hellenophile professor. The story went that in the days before the final stand of the famous Three Hundred, Aristodemus was stricken with an eye infection. The Spartan king, Leonidas, having no use for a blind soldier, sent Aristodemus home before the Persians slaughtered what was left of his army.

“Aristodemus,” said Lin Bao, “was the only Spartan who survived to tell the story.”

Minister Chiang leaned back in his armchair. “This is what Ma Qiang doesn't understand,” he said with an amused half smile. “He wasn't sent to sink three American warships; that was not his mission. His mission was to send a message. If the entire flotilla was destroyed, if it disappeared, the message would be lost. Who would deliver it? Who would tell the story of what happened? But by sparing a few survivors, by showing some restraint, we will be able to send our message more clearly. The point here is not to start a needless war but to get the Americans to finally listen to us, to respect the sovereignty of our waters.”

Minister Chiang then complimented Lin Bao on his effectiveness as the American attaché, noting how well he'd managed the baiting of the *John*

Paul Jones with the *Wén Rui*, and how American culpability in the seizure of that intelligence vessel disguised as a fishing trawler would undermine the international outcry that was certain to begin at the United Nations and then trickle from that ineffectual international organization to others that were equally ineffectual. Then, being in a pensive mood, Minister Chiang held forth on his vision of events as they might unfold in the coming days. He imagined the surviving crew members of the *John Paul Jones* recounting how they had been spared by the *Zheng He*. He imagined the Politburo Standing Committee brokering a deal with their Iranian allies to release the downed F-35 and its pilot as a means of placating the Americans. And lastly, he imagined their own country and its navy possessing unfettered control of the South China Sea, a goal generations in the making.

By the time he'd finished his explication, Minister Chiang seemed in an expansive mood. He placed his hand on Lin Bao's wrist. "As for you," he began, "our nation owes you a great debt. I imagine you'd like to spend some time with your family, but we also need to see to your next posting. Where would you like to be assigned?"

Lin Bao sat up in his chair. He looked the minister in the eye, knowing that such an opportunity might never again present itself. "Command at sea, Comrade Minister. That's my request."

"Very well," answered Minister Chiang. He gave a slight backhanded wave as he stood, as if with this gesture alone he had already granted such a wish.

Then as Minister Chiang headed for the door, Lin Bao plucked up his courage and added one caveat, "Specifically, Comrade Minister, I request command of the *Zheng He* Carrier Battle Group."

Minister Chiang stopped. He turned over his shoulder. "You would take Ma Qiang's command from him?" Then he began to laugh. "Maybe I was wrong about you. Perhaps you are the cruel one. We'll see what can be arranged. And please, take those damn M&M's with you."

16:07 MARCH 22, 2034 (GMT-4)
WASHINGTON, D.C.

For ten days Sandeep Chowdhury had slept on the floor of his office. His mother watched his daughter. His ex-wife didn't harass him with a single email or text message even after internet and cellular service resumed. His personal life remained mercifully quiet. He could attribute this détente to the crisis consuming the country's attention and his family's knowledge that he was playing a central part in its management. On the political left and political right, old adversaries seemed willing to dispense with decades of antipathy in the face of this new aggression. It had taken the television networks and newspapers about a day, maybe two, to understand the magnitude of what had occurred in the South China Sea and over the skies of Iran:

A flotilla wiped out.

A downed pilot.

The result was public unity. But also, a public outcry.

This outcry had grown louder and louder, to the point where it had become deafening. On the morning talk shows, on the evening news, the message was clear: *We have to do something*. Inside the administration a vociferous group of officials led by National Security Advisor Trent Wisecarver subscribed to the wisdom of the masses, believing that the US military must demonstrate to the world its unquestioned supremacy. “When tested, we must act” was the refrain echoed by this camp in various corners of the White House, except for one specific corner, the most important one, which was the Oval Office. The president had her doubts. Her camp, of which Chowdhury counted himself a member, had no refrain that they articulated within the administration, or on television, or in print. Their doubts manifested in a general reluctance to escalate a situation that seemed to have already spun out of control. The president and her allies were, put simply, dragging their feet.

This excerpt appears in the February 2021 issue. [Subscribe to WIRED.](#)

Illustration: Owen Freeman

Ten days into this crisis, the strategy of de-escalation seemed to be failing. Like the sinking of the *Lusitania* in the First World War, or the cries of “Remember the *Maine*!” at the outbreak of the Spanish-American War, a new set of names had replaced these historical ones. Within days, every American knew about the sinking of the *Carl Levin* and the *Chung-Hoon*, as well as the survival of the *John Paul Jones*, which hadn't really survived but had been scuttled by the submarine that had rescued its few dozen remaining crew members, to include the commodore of the flotilla, whom the Navy had kept out of the limelight as she faced a board of inquiry.

If Sarah Hunt had, at least up to this point, managed to remain relatively anonymous, the opposite held true for Marine Major Chris “Wedge” Mitchell. After the Battle of Mischief Reef, as the media dubbed the one-sided engagement, senior Chinese officials reached out to the administration. Minister of Defense Chiang was particularly engaged, insisting that this crisis was one large misunderstanding. As a gesture of goodwill, he offered himself to the Americans as an intermediary between them and the Iranians. He would personally negotiate the return of the F-35 and the release of its pilot. When a delegation of Chinese emissaries arrived with this message at the US embassy in New Delhi—their own embassy in Washington having been shut down in the wake of the crisis—the administration replied that it was the height of dishonesty to pretend that the F-35 would be turned over before the pilfering of its many sensitive technological secrets by the Chinese and Iranians. As for the pilot, the administration was under an intense amount of pressure to recover him.

Three days after Major Mitchell went missing, his name was leaked by someone in the administration to a cable news network. An anchor at that network then paid a visit to the Mitchell family home outside of Kansas City, Missouri, where she found quite a story: four generations of Marine fighter pilots. The anchor conducted her interview in a living room with nearly one hundred years of memorabilia hanging on the walls, from captured Japanese battle flags to a blood-splattered flight suit. On camera, Major Mitchell's father described his son, from time to time staring vacantly into the backyard, out toward a tree with the two rusted steel anchor points of a swing set drilled into its thickest branch. The elder Mitchell spoke about the family, the decades of tradition, all the way back to his own

grandfather, who had flown with the vaunted *Black Sheep* squadron in the Second World War. The segment integrated photos of the young, handsome Major Chris “Wedge” Mitchell alongside photos of his father, and of his “Pop,” and of his “Pop-Pop,” the passage of generations linking the America of this time to the America of another time, when the country had been at the height of its greatness.

The video went up online, and within hours it had been watched millions of times.

At a National Security Council meeting in the Situation Room on the fifth day of the crisis, the president asked if everyone had seen the segment. They all had. Already, *#FreeWedge* had begun to trend heavily on social media. One only had to look out of any West Wing window to see the proliferation of black POW/MIA flags that overnight picketed the Washington skyline. The president wondered aloud why the plight of this one pilot seemed to resonate more profoundly than the deaths of hundreds of sailors in the South China Sea. The room grew very quiet. Every staffer knew that on her desk for signature were the letters of condolence to the families of the *Levin*, *Chung-Hoon*, and *John Paul Jones*. Why, she asked rhetorically, does he matter more than them?

“He’s a throwback, ma’am,” Chowdhury blurted out.

He didn’t even have a seat but was standing against the wall among the other backbench staffers. Half the cabinet turned to face him. He immediately regretted that he’d opened his mouth. He glanced down at his hands, as if by looking away he might convince the room that someone else had spoken, that his comment had been some strange act of ventriloquism.

In a firm but measured tone the president asked him to explain.

“Wedge is a link in a chain,” Chowdhury began hesitantly, gaining confidence as he went. “His family ties us back to the last time we defeated a peer-level military. The country can intuit what might be coming. Seeing him reminds people of what we as a nation are capable of accomplishing. That’s why they’re so invested in him.”

No one either agreed or disagreed with Chowdhury.

After a few beats of silence, the president told the room that she had one goal, and one goal alone, which was to avoid an escalation that would lead to the type of peer-to-peer conflict Chowdhury had mentioned. “Is that clear?” she said, leveling her gaze at those around the conference table.

Everyone nodded, but a lingering tension made it evident that not everyone agreed.

The president then stood from her seat at the head of the table and left, a trail of her aides following behind her. The hum of conversation resumed. The various secretaries and agency heads engaged in sidebar discussions, leaning in to one another as close as conspirators as they filtered out into the corridor. A pair of junior aides swept into the room and checked that no sensitive notes or errant document had been left behind.

As Chowdhury migrated back to his desk, his boss, Trent Wisecarver, found him. “Sandy ...” Like a child who can tell whether he is in trouble from the inflection of a parent's voice, Chowdhury could tell immediately that Wisecarver was upset with him for speaking out of turn in the meeting. Chowdhury began to equivocate, apologizing for his outburst and making assurances that it wouldn't happen again. More than a decade before, Wisecarver's young son had perished in the coronavirus pandemic, a personal tragedy to which many attributed Wisecarver's hawkish political awakening and which made him adept at projecting fatherly guilt onto those subordinates he treated as surrogate children.

“Sandy,” repeated Wisecarver, though his voice was different now, a bit softer and more conciliatory. “Take a break. Go home.”

03:34 MARCH 20, 2034 (GMT+4:30)
TEHRAN

At first Wedge thought he was home. He'd woken up in a dark room, in a bed with clean sheets. He couldn't see a thing. Then he noticed a single bar of light beneath what must have been a shut door. He lifted his head to take a closer look. That's when the pain hit him. And with the pain came the

realization that he was very far indeed from home. He returned his head to the pillow and kept his eyes open to the dark.

He couldn't quite remember what had happened at first, but slowly, details began to emerge: his starboard wing dancing along the border ... losing flight control ... his attempt to eject ... his descent toward Bandar Abbas ... his smoking a Marlboro on the tarmac ... the man with the scars ... the pressure of that three-fingered grip against his shoulder. It took an entire night for these details to resurface.

He ran his tongue through his mouth and could feel the gaps among his teeth. His lips felt fat and blistered. Light began to suggest itself at the rim of the curtains. Wedge was soon able to take in his surroundings, but his vision was blurred. One of his eyes was swollen shut, and he could hardly see through the other.

Without his vision, he'd never fly again.

Everything else would heal. Everything else could be undone. Not this.

He tried to reach his hand to his face, but his arm couldn't move. His wrists were cuffed to the frame of the bed. He pulled and then pulled again, his restraints rattling as he struggled to touch his face. A hurried procession of footsteps advanced toward his room. His door opened; balanced in the brightly lit threshold was a young nurse wearing a hijab. She held her finger to her mouth, shushing him. She wouldn't come too close. She formed both hands into a pleading gesture and spoke softly in a language Wedge didn't understand. Then she left. He could hear her running down the corridor.

There was light in his room now.

Hanging from a metal arm in the far corner was a television.

Something was written on its bottom.

Wedge relaxed his throbbing head against the pillow. With his unswollen eye, he focused on the television and the piece of text embossed at its base. It took all of his concentration but, slowly, the letters became sharper,

shoring up around the edges. The image gathered itself, coming into focus. Then he could see it, in near twenty-twenty clarity, that fantastic and redeeming name: PANASONIC.

He shut his eyes and swallowed away a slight lump of emotion in his throat.

“Good morning, Major Wedge,” came a voice as it entered. Its accent was haltingly British, and Wedge turned his attention in its direction. The man was Persian, with a bony face cut at flat angles like the blades of several knives, and a precisely cropped beard. He wore a white orderly coat. His long, tapered fingers began to manipulate the various intravenous lines that ran out of Wedge's arms, which remained cuffed to the bed frame.

Wedge gave the doctor his best defiant stare.

The doctor, in an effort to ingratiate himself, offered a bit of friendly explication. “You suffered an accident, Major Wedge,” he began, “so we brought you here, to Arad Hospital, which I assure you is one of the finest in Tehran. Your accident was quite severe, but for the past week my colleagues and I have been looking after you.” The doctor then nodded to the nurse, who followed him around Wedge's bedside, as though she were the assistant to a magician in the midst of his act. “We very much want to return you home,” continued the doctor, “but unfortunately your government isn't making that easy for us. However, I'm confident this will all get resolved soon and that you'll be on your way. How does that sound, Major Wedge?”

Wedge still didn't say anything. He simply continued on with his stare.

“Right,” said the doctor uncomfortably. “Well, can you at least tell me how you're feeling today?”

Wedge looked again at the television; PANASONIC came into focus a bit more quickly this time. He smiled, painfully, and then he turned to the doctor and told him what he resolved would be the only thing he told any of these fucking people: His name. His rank. His service number.

09:42 MARCH 23, 2034 (GMT-4)

WASHINGTON, D.C.

He'd done as he'd been told. Chowdhury had gone home. He'd spent the evening with Ashni, just the two of them. He'd made them chicken fingers and french fries, their favorite, and they'd watched an old movie, *The Blues Brothers*, also their favorite. He read her three Dr. Seuss books, and halfway through the third—*The Butter Battle Book*—he fell asleep beside her, waking after midnight to stumble down the hall of their duplex to his own bed. When he woke the next morning, he had an email from Wisecarver. Subject: *Today*. Text: *Take it off*.

So he dropped his daughter at school. He came home. He made himself a French press coffee, bacon, eggs, toast. Then he wondered what else he might do. There were still a couple of hours until lunch. He walked to Logan Circle with his tablet and sat on a bench reading his news feed; every bit of coverage—from the international section, to the national section, to the opinion pages and even the arts—it all dealt in one way or another with the crisis of the past ten days. The editorials were contradictory. One cautioned against a phony war, comparing the *Wén Rui* incident to the Gulf of Tonkin, and warned of opportunistic politicians who now, just as seventy years before, “*would use this crisis as a means to advance ill-advised policy objectives in Southeast Asia.*” The next editorial reached even further back in history to express a contradictory view, noting at length the dangers of appeasement: “*If the Nazis had been stopped in the Sudetenland, a great bloodletting might have been avoided.*” Chowdhury began to skim, coming to, “*In the South China Sea the tide of aggression has once again risen upon the free peoples of the world.*” He could hardly finish this article, which sustained itself on ever loftier rhetoric in the name of pushing the country toward war.

Chowdhury remembered a classmate of his from graduate school, a Navy lieutenant commander, a prior enlisted sailor who'd gotten his start as a hospital corpsman with the Marines in Iraq. Walking past his cubicle in the study carrels one day, Chowdhury had noticed a vintage postcard of the USS *Maine* tacked to the partition. When Chowdhury joked that he ought to have a ship that *didn't* blow up and sink pinned to his cubicle, the officer replied, “I keep it there for two reasons, Sandy. One is as a reminder that

complacency kills—a ship loaded out with fuel and munitions can explode at any time. But, more importantly, I keep it there to remind me that when the *Maine* blew up in 1898—before social media, before twenty-four-hour news—we had no problem engaging in national hysteria, blaming it on ‘Spanish terrorists,’ which of course led to the Spanish-American War. Fifty years later, after World War Two, when we finally performed a full investigation, you know what they found? The *Maine* blew up because of an internal explosion—a ruptured boiler or a compromised ammunition storage compartment. The lesson of the *Maine*—or even Iraq, where I fought—is that you better be goddamn sure you know what's going on before you start a war.”

Chowdhury closed his newsfeed. It was nearly lunch time. He walked home lost in thought. His desire for de-escalation didn't stem from any pacifistic tendencies on his part. He believed in the use of force—after all, he worked on the National Security Council staff. His fear of escalation was more instinctual. Inherent in all wars, he knew, was a miscalculation: When a war starts, both sides believe that they will win.

As he walked, he struggled to put words around his reservations as if he were writing a white paper to himself. His opening sentence came to him. It would be, *The America that we believe ourselves to be is no longer the America that we are ...*

He thought this was a true statement. He pondered just how fraught a statement it was, how an overestimation of American strength could be disastrous. But it was lunch time, and there was nothing he could do about such existential questions, at least at this moment. This crisis, like every other, would likely pass. Cooler heads would prevail because it seemed that they always did.

He rooted around in the fridge. Not much there.

In the background, CNN was playing. The anchor announced some breaking news. “We have obtained exclusive video of downed Marine pilot Major Chris Mitchell.”

Chowdhury banged the back of his head as he startled up from the fridge. Before he could get to the television, he heard the warning that the video was graphic, that it might prove disturbing to some audiences. Chowdhury didn't wait around to see it. He already knew how bad it was. He climbed into his car and rushed to the office, forgetting to turn off the television.

He texted his mother to see if she could pick up Ashni from school, lest he appear negligent to his ex-wife. His mother wrote back immediately and, uncharacteristically, didn't complain about yet another change in plan. She must have already seen the video, thought Chowdhury. He was listening to the radio on his fifteen-minute drive into work; MSNBC, Fox, NPR, WAMU, even the local hip-hop station WPGC—everyone was talking about what they'd just seen. The image quality was grainy, pixelated, but what they all fixated on was how Wedge—lying on his side, with that brute of an Iranian officer standing over him, kicking him in the ribs and head—kept repeating only his name, rank, and service number.

The divergence of views Chowdhury had read in the paper that morning was quickly yielding to a consensus. Every voice he heard on the drive into work agreed: The defiance displayed by this downed flyer was an example to us all. We wouldn't be pushed around, not by anyone. Had we forgotten who we were? Had we forgotten the spirit which made us that single, indispensable nation? Chowdhury thought of yesterday's debate in the Situation Room and the president's policy of de-escalation. With the release of this video, such a policy would become untenable.

When he barged into his office, the first person he saw was Hendrickson, whom he hadn't seen since the crisis began. The offices of the national security staff were packed with Pentagon augments who were helping with—or at times getting in the way of—the administration's response to the Iranians. “When did the video come in?” Chowdhury asked Hendrickson.

He pulled Chowdhury into the corridor. “It came in last night,” he said in a conspiratorial whisper, glancing side to side as though he were about to cross the road. “A signals intercept from Cyber Command—weird that it didn't come from NSA. It seems this Iranian brigadier in the video lost his cool. He's well connected, and his superiors didn't quite believe what he'd done until a video circulated internally of the interrogation. We picked it up

in their email traffic. Cyber defense has never been a strong suit for the Iranians. They have a tendency to focus on offensive cyber but kind of forget to guard the barn door.”

“How did it get to the press?” asked Chowdhury.

Hendrickson gave him a look, one Chowdhury had seen many times before when they'd attended the Fletcher School and either Chowdhury or one of his classmates had asked a question with an answer so obvious that its very asking annoyed Hendrickson. Nevertheless, Hendrickson obliged with an answer. “How do you think? A leak.”

Before Chowdhury could ask Hendrickson who he thought had leaked the video, Trent Wisecarver stepped out from the office and into the corridor where the two stood. His frameless glasses were balanced on the tip of his nose, as if he'd been reading. Under his arm were several binders marked TOP SECRET//NOFORN. Based on their thickness and on the fact that they were paper, not electronic, Chowdhury assumed them to be military operational plans of the highest sensitivity. When he saw Chowdhury, Wisecarver made a face. “Didn't I tell you to take the day off?”

16:23 APRIL 09, 2034 (GMT+9)
YOKOSUKA NAVAL BASE

Captain Sarah Hunt ventured out to the commissary on foot. For three weeks she'd been trapped on base without a car, living in a room at the bachelor officers' quarters, its only amenities a television that played the antiseptically boring American Forces Network and a kitchenette with a mini-fridge that didn't make ice. Why the Navy chose to perform her board of inquiry here, at Yokosuka, instead of her home port of San Diego, was a mystery to her. Her best guess was that they wanted to avoid any undue attention paid to the proceedings, but she couldn't be certain. The Navy wasn't in the business of explaining its decisions, not to anyone, and most certainly not to itself, at least at her level of command. And so she'd spent the intervening weeks since the Battle of Mischief Reef stowed away in this crappy room, reporting to a nondescript office building once or twice a day to give recorded answers to questions and hoping that the deliberations in

progress might clear her name so that the administrative hold she'd been placed under would soon lift, allowing her to retire in peace.

She'd begun to think that the board of inquiry might never reach its conclusion when an optimistic note arrived in the form of a voicemail left by her old friend Rear Admiral John Hendrickson, in which he announced that he “happened to be on base” and asked if he could stop by for a drink. When he was a lieutenant on faculty at Annapolis, Hendrickson had volunteered as one of the softball coaches. As a midshipman, Hunt had been one of his star players. She'd been the catcher. And Hendrickson and the other players had affectionately nicknamed her “Stonewall” for the way she guarded home plate. On occasions too numerous to count, a runner rounding third would find herself flat on her back along the baseline, staring up at an expanse of sky, while Midshipman Sarah “Stonewall” Hunt stood triumphantly over her, ball in hand, with the umpire bellowing, “Ouutt!”

Sarah Hunt now stood in the checkout line of the commissary. She'd bought two six-packs of IPA, a jar of Planters mixed nuts, some crackers, some cheese. While she waited in line, she couldn't help but feel as though the other sailors were eyeing her. They knew who she was, stealing glances while trying to pretend that they didn't notice her. She couldn't decide whether this reaction was awe or contempt. She had fought in her country's largest naval battle since the Second World War.

She was, at this moment, the only officer who had ever held command at sea during a peer-level naval engagement, her three subordinate commanders having gone down with their ships. As she worked her way through the checkout line, she wondered how the sailors at Pearl Harbor felt in the days after that iconic defeat. Although eventually they had been celebrated, were the veterans of that battle first vilified? Did they have to suffer through boards of inquiry?

The cashier handed Hunt her receipt.

Back in her room, she put the nuts into a plastic bowl. She laid the crackers and cheese on a plate. She popped open a beer. And then she waited.

It didn't take long.

Knock, knock, knock ... knock ... knock ... knock ... knock, knock, knock ...

Unreal, thought Hunt.

She called out for him to come in. Hendrickson opened the unlocked door, crossed the room, and sat across from Hunt at the small table in the kitchenette. He exhaled heavily, as though he were tired; then he took one of the beers that sat sweating condensation on the table, as well as a fistful of the salty nuts. They knew each other so well that neither had to speak.

“Cute with the knocks,” Hunt eventually said.

“SOS, remember?”

She nodded, and then added, “But this isn't Bancroft Hall. I'm not a 21-year-old midshipman and you aren't a 27-year-old lieutenant sneaking into my room.”

He nodded sadly.

“How's Suze?”

“Fine,” he answered.

“The kids?”

“Also fine ... grandkid soon,” he added, allowing his voice to perk up. “Kristine's pregnant. The timing's good. She just finished a flight tour. She's slated for shore duty.”

“She still with that guy, the artist?”

“Graphic designer,” Hendrickson corrected.

“Smart girl,” said Hunt, giving a defeated smile. If Hunt had ever married, she knew it would've needed to be an artist, a poet, someone whose ambition—or lack thereof—didn't conflict with her own. She had always known this. That was why, decades before, she'd broken off her affair with Hendrickson. Neither of them was married at the time, so what made it an

affair—because affairs are illicit—was their discrepancy in rank. Hendrickson thought after Hunt's graduation from Annapolis they could be out in the open. Despite Hunt's feelings for Hendrickson, which were real, she knew she could never be with him, or at least never be with him and have the career she wanted. When she explained this logic weeks before her graduation, he had told her that she was the love of his life, a claim that in the intervening thirty years he'd never disavowed. She had offered him only the same stony silence they now shared, which in that moment again reminded him of her namesake from those years ago—Stonewall.

“How you holding up?” Hendrickson eventually asked her.

“Fine,” she said, taking a long pull off her beer.

“The board of inquiry's almost finished with its report,” he offered.

She looked away from him, out the window, toward the port where she'd noticed over the past week an unusually heavy concentration of ships.

“Sarah, I've read over what happened. The Navy should've given you a medal, not an investigation.” He reached out and put his hand on her arm.

Her gaze remained fixed on the acres of anchored gray steel. What she wouldn't give to be on the deck of any of those ships instead of here, trapped in this room, at the end of a career cut short. “They don't give medals,” she said, “to commodores who lose all their ships.”

“I know.”

She glared at him. He was an inadequate receptacle for her grievances: from the destruction of her flotilla; to her medical retirement; all the way back to her decision never to have a family, to make the Navy her family.

Hendrickson had gone on to have a career gilded with command at every level, prestigious fellowships, impressive graduate degrees, and even a White House posting, while also having a wife, children, and now a grandchild. Hunt had never had any of this, or at least not in the proportions that she had once hoped. “Is that why you came here?” she asked bitterly. “To tell me that I should've gotten a medal?”

“No,” he said, taking his hand off her arm and coming up in his seat. He leaned toward her as if for a moment he might go so far as to remind her of their difference in rank, that even she could push him too far. “I came here to tell you that the board of inquiry is going to find that you did everything possible given the circumstances.”

“What circumstances are those?”

Hendrickson grabbed a fistful of the nuts, dropping them one at a time in his mouth. “That's what I was hoping you might tell me.”

The board of inquiry wasn't the only reason Hendrickson had flown from Washington to Yokosuka. This should've been obvious to Hunt, but it hadn't been. She was so ensconced in her own grief, in her own frustration, that she hadn't given much thought to broader events. “You're here to coordinate our response?” she asked.

He nodded.

“What's our response going to be?”

“I'm not at liberty to say, Sarah. But you can imagine.”

She glanced back out to the port filled with ships, to the twin carriers at anchor studded with parked fighters on their decks, to the low-set submarines brooding on the surface, and then to the new semisubmersible frigates and the more traditional destroyers with their bladelike hulls facing out to sea.

This was the response.

“Where are you and your bosses going to send these ships?”

He didn't answer, but instead held forth on a range of technical issues. “You told the board of inquiry that your communications shut down. We haven't figured out how they did this, but we have some theories.” He asked her about the frequency of the static she heard from her failing radios, about whether the Aegis terminal turned off or simply froze. He asked a series of

more runic questions above the classification level of the board of inquiry. She answered—at least as best she could—until she couldn't stand it anymore, until Hendrickson's questions began to prove that whatever response he and his masters at the White House had planned against their adversaries in Beijing was fated to be a disaster.

“Don't you see?” she finally said, exasperated. “The technical details of what they did hardly matter. The way to defeat technology isn't with more technology. It is with no technology. They'll blind the elephant and then overwhelm us.”

He gave her a confused, sidelong glance. “What elephant?”

“Us,” she added. “We're the elephant.”

Hendrickson finished off the last of his beer. It'd been a long day and a tough few weeks, he told her. He'd return in the morning to check on her, and then he had a flight out the following afternoon. He understood what she was saying, or at least wanted to understand. But the administration, he explained, was under enormous pressure to do something, to somehow demonstrate that they wouldn't be cowed. It wasn't only what had happened here but also this pilot, he said, this Marine who'd been brought down. Then he ruminated on the curse of domestic politics driving international policy as he stood from his seat and made for the door. “So, we'll pick up again tomorrow?” he asked.

She didn't answer.

“Okay?” he added.

She nodded. “Okay.” She shut the door behind him as he left.

That night her sleep was thin and empty, except for one dream. He was in it. And the Navy wasn't. It was the two of them in an alternative life, where their choices had been different. She woke from that dream and didn't sleep well the rest of the night because she kept trying to return to it. The following morning, she woke to a knock at her door. But it wasn't him; it wasn't his familiar SOS knock, just a plain knocking.

When she opened her door, a pimply faced sailor handed over a message. She was to report to the board of inquiry that afternoon for a final interview. She thanked the sailor and returned to her dim room, where the darkness congealed in the empty corners. She threw open the drapes to let in the light. It blinded her for a moment.

She rubbed at her eyes and looked down onto the port.

It was empty.

Adapted from [2034: A Novel of the Next World War](#) by Elliot Ackerman and Admiral James Stavridis to be published March 09, 2021, by Penguin Press, an imprint of Penguin Publishing Group, a division of Penguin Random House LLC. Copyright © 2021 by Elliot Ackerman and James Stavridis.

If you buy something using links in our stories, we may earn a commission. This helps support our journalism. [Learn more.](#)

Illustrations by Sam Whitney; Getty Images

This excerpt appears in the February 2021 issue. [Subscribe now.](#)

Let us know what you think about this article. Submit a letter to the editor at mail@wired.com.

This article was downloaded by **calibre** from <https://www.wired.com/story/2034-part-iii-one-left-tell-tale/>

[Paul Ford](#)

[Ideas](#)

02.08.2021 07:00 AM

The Secret, Essential Geography of the Office

A workplace has its own informal cardinal directions: elevatorward, kitchenward, bathroomward. It's a map we share.


 An illustrated map of an office building.

Illustration: Elena Lacey

I once worked for a few weeks at a big, busy company, and one day I asked, jokingly, “Where do I go to cry?” An hour later, I was taken aside and told in seriousness about a specific stairwell. Another person there led me on a five-minute walk through the skyscraper to a tiny, hidden conference room, and then made me promise to keep the location a secret, a vow I have kept. (They also cried.)

I think of those as “weeping paths,” part of the secret map of every office. You cannot sob at your desk, so you must go on a journey, smiling at the floor, until you find a place where emotion can flow. Offices have their own mental maps. “Oh,” they say, “she’s moving to the 17th floor.” And everyone says: *the 17th floor!* And you know, being a social primate, exactly where you are in the organization relative to that floor. Offices all have their formal and informal maps, whether inside a bank, statehouse, cathedral, museum, school, or open-plan tech firm. I say “West Wing” and you know what I’m talking about.

I keep reading that the office era is over—that our pandemic has proven that “office culture” is an oxymoron. When the virus hit we left our desks and threw away our commutes, and now no one can tap our shoulders (or, much

worse, massage them). And aren't we better for it? Don't humans work better as nodes in a network than as cattle in a pen? We are, finally, free to get to it.

But I don't buy this. There's a book I love, *Space and Place*, by the human geographer Yi-Fu Tuan. Human geography is a beautiful '70s-style academic discipline, and Tuan is its gentlest practitioner. *Space and Place* is only about 200 pages of thoughtful prose, but I've never finished it; I read a paragraph at a time, and that fills up my brain. I've been reading it for a decade. He writes: "The manager's office may be only two doors from the vice president's office, but it will take the manager years of hard work to get there. The vice president's office is a temporal goal. Goal is also a place in space, the promised land on the other side of the ocean or mountain." And then there's a little subway map where one train line is time, ending in the vice presidency, and the other is distance, ending in the "promised land." You need to see it. (So beautifully broad. Everyone today has to be so specific.)

I love visiting offices, listening to their hum. Literally: I sometimes went to a giant financial firm where they traded different kinds of securities on different floors, and if it was a big day in bonds the fourth floor would be loud, loud; the fifth floor, though, focused on shorter-term investments, would be almost silent. You could *hear* the economy.

I enjoy the rituals of visiting. First, there is security: How long will I wait? Who will greet me in the lobby, should I ever gain access—a human whose job is to handle ingress and egress, or is each person expected to greet their own visitors? Will I get a VISITOR sticker, and will the sticker change color in a day, for security purposes? Is the coffee brought to me or may I get it myself? Sometimes you learn that people have had sex in a given office, which is hard to forget. There are cardinal directions—elevatorward, kitchenward, bathroomward. Favored stalls. Better sinks. Teensy little geographies shared between humans.

I have a friend who worked at the White House, back in calmer times, and he told me about some of his workplace battles. I said to him one of the dumbest things I've ever said in my life: "The White House seems like a really political place to work." I still cringe to think of it. Yet it's a place

where power is absolutely explicit and geography means everything. And “place,” as Tuan points out, is really a proxy for time. The president might summon anyone any moment of the day, from anywhere in the nation. If you work in one of the rare offices in the West Wing, instead of across the alley at the enormous Executive Office Building, you can be in the Oval Office in a minute. It’s purely about time, measured in the count of footsteps between you and power. Everyone knows that. The West Wing offices themselves absolutely suck. The whole place smells weird.

Home is supposed to be a constant, steady place, a shelter for a family. It shouldn’t change very much. But an office is basically a big clock with humans for hands. And I find that the people who don’t want to go back to pre-pandemic office culture are the people who are the most concerned about their time. Sometimes this is their personality; they are engineers who look at travel as a waste, who seek efficiencies in their work and health. Sometimes they’re people with other stress, like parents of young children who triangulate between the day care’s schedule, their boss’s expectations, and kids’ needs. For a disabled person, working from home can save hours of daily, needless negotiation. All of these cases are utterly valid. And yet we’re going back. Maybe not all of us, maybe with hybrid schedules. But most of us. We all know it.

If you don’t believe me, try making a map of your office. See what you remember. Where do people go when they are rewarded, punished? Where is power concentrated, and where do you sit? What paths do people take to accomplish their goals? Are some emotions possible in one space and not another? (Take a picture and send it to me. I want to see.)

Now make a map of your “digital office.” It will be a bunch of squares and a screenshot of a web browser. I like working at home. It’s efficient and I’m glad for the time I get back. But digital work has a lousy clock. Hours blur. Meetings all look the same. My map of our company’s office is filled with pathways, memories, art, people who came and went. (And it’s a small, single-floor, open office!) It’s got a history. Some nights I stayed late, ordered takeout, and sang loudly while getting some terrible presentation done. Sometimes I presented to 60 people in a room. So did the companies

that occupied the space before—publishers, textile wholesalers—going back a full century.

I like existing in that continuum of memories. Someone will move in after we move out. Screens hang all over the office so that our remote employees can be present. We spend a lot of time and money making sure that they can share in office events. It doesn't have to be all or none. But the office doesn't so much give meaning to my work as it is the meaning of my work. It'd be hard to give that up.

This article was downloaded by **calibre** from <https://www.wired.com/story/the-secret-essential-geography-of-the-office/>

| [Section menu](#) | [Main menu](#) |

[Arthur Holland Michel](#)

[Backchannel](#)

02.04.2021 12:00 PM

There Are Spying Eyes Everywhere —and Now They Share a Brain

Security cameras. License plate readers. Smartphone trackers. Drones. We're being watched 24/7. What happens when all those data streams fuse into one?



A city scene with a camera watching over everything.

Illustration: Yoshi Sodeoka

One afternoon in the fall of 2019, in a grand old office building near the Arc de Triomphe, I was buzzed through an unmarked door into a showroom for the future of surveillance. The space on the other side was dark and sleek, with a look somewhere between an Apple Store and a doomsday bunker. Along one wall, a grid of electronic devices glinted in the moody downlighting—automated license plate readers, Wi-Fi-enabled locks, boxy data processing units. I was here to meet Giovanni Gaccione, who runs the public safety division of a security technology company called Genetec. Headquartered in Montreal, the firm operates four of these “Experience Centers” around the world, where it peddles intelligence products to government officials. Genetec’s main sell here was software, and Gaccione had agreed to show me how it worked.

He led me first to a large monitor running a demo version of Citigraf, his division’s flagship product. The screen displayed a map of the East Side of Chicago. Around the edges were thumbnail-size video streams from neighborhood CCTV cameras. In one feed, a woman appeared to be unloading luggage from a car to the sidewalk. An alert popped up above her head: “ILLEGAL PARKING.” The map itself was scattered with color-

coded icons—a house on fire, a gun, a pair of wrestling stick figures—each of which, Gaccione explained, corresponded to an unfolding emergency. He selected the stick figures, which denoted an assault, and a readout appeared onscreen with a few scant details drawn from the 911 dispatch center. At the bottom was a button marked “INVESTIGATE,” just begging to be clicked.

Citigraf was conceived in 2016, when the Chicago Police Department hired Genetec to solve a surveillance conundrum. Like other large law enforcement organizations around the country, the department had built up such an impressive arsenal of technologies for keeping tabs on citizens that it had reached the point of [surveillance](#) overload. To get a clear picture of an emergency in progress, officers often had to bushwhack through dozens of byzantine databases and feeds from far-flung sensors, including gunshot detectors, license plate readers, and public and private security cameras. This process of braiding together strands of information—“multi-intelligence fusion” is the technical term—was becoming too difficult. As one Chicago official put it, echoing a well-worn aphorism in surveillance circles, the city was “data-rich but information-poor.” What investigators needed was a tool that could cut a clean line through the labyrinth. What they needed was automated fusion.

Gaccione now demonstrated the concept in practice. He clicked “INVESTIGATE,” and Citigraf got to work on the reported assault. The software runs on what Genetec calls a “correlation engine,” a suite of algorithms that trawl through a city’s historical police records and live sensor feeds, looking for patterns and connections. Seconds later, a long list of possible leads appeared onscreen, including a lineup of individuals previously arrested in the neighborhood for violent crimes, the home addresses of parolees living nearby, a catalog of similar recent 911 calls, photographs and license plate numbers of vehicles that had been detected speeding away from the scene, and video feeds from any cameras that might have picked up evidence of the crime itself, including those mounted on passing buses and trains. More than enough information, in other words, for an officer to respond to that original 911 call with a nearly telepathic sense of what has just unfolded.

Gaccione turned to a second console, this one loaded with a program called Valcri. Where Citigraf is designed for relaying early leads to patrol officers

rushing to the scene of a crime, Valcri is for the detectives working long cases at the precinct. Originally developed to root out sex-trafficking rings, its fusion algorithms hunt for subtler, more elaborate patterns that might stretch across years of unstructured data. Gaccione told me about one counterterrorism unit, which he wouldn't name, that had used the system to build a detailed profile of "a middle-aged unemployed individual with signs of radicalization," using "various databases, CCTV, phone records, banking transactions, and other surveillance methods." If done manually, he estimated, this kind of investigatory grunt work would take a couple of weeks. In this instance, it took "less than a day."

The market for fusion technology has been enjoying a quiet boom in recent years. Genetec says that Citigraf is deployed in "many cities." A growing number of established tech giants, including [Cisco](#), [Microsoft](#), and [Motorola](#), sell fusion systems globally, often in the guise of "smart city" modernization packages. (Cisco sometimes even sweetens the pot with no-interest financing.) [Palantir](#), which bills itself as a "data integration" firm, reportedly counts among its clients the Central Intelligence Agency, Immigration and Customs Enforcement, and the Centers for Disease Control and Prevention. [Anduril](#) has built a "virtual wall" along parts of the border with Mexico, using fusion software to link together a network of surveillance towers. Last fall, the four-year-old company won a flexible contract, capped at \$950 million, to contribute elements of the technology to the US military's [Advanced Battle Management System](#).

For all these customers, a central appeal of fusion is that it can scale to new sources of data. You can add fuel to your "correlation engine" by, say, hooking up a new network of sensors or acquiring a privately owned library of smartphone location data. (The Pentagon's Special Operations Command was [recently revealed](#) to be a buyer of many such libraries, including those from a Muslim prayer app with tens of millions of users.) Organizations with their own coders can develop capabilities in-house. In New York, for instance, the police department's analytics division created a custom plug-in for its fusion system. The feature, called Patternizr, draws on more than a decade's worth of departmental data to match property crimes that could be related to each other. When a new report comes in, all the investigator has to do is click "Patternize," and the system will return a list of previous incidents, scored and ranked by similarity.

Mind-bending new breakthroughs in sensor technology get a lot of buzzy press: A laser that can covertly identify you from two football fields away by measuring your heartbeat. A hack that makes your smartphone spy on anything nearby with a Bluetooth connection, from your Fitbit to your smart refrigerator. A computer vision system that will let the authorities know if you suddenly break into a run within sight of a CCTV camera. But it's a mistake to focus our dread on each of these tools individually. In many places across the world, they're all inputs for a system that, with each new plug-in, reaches a little closer to omniscience.

That idea—of an ever-expanding, all-knowing surveillance platform—used to be a technologist's fantasy, like the hoverbike or the jetpack. To understand how this particular hoverbike will finally be built, I began by calling up the people who designed the prototype.

Dig Deeper with Our Longreads Newsletter

Sign up to get our best longform features, investigations, and thought-provoking essays, in your inbox every Sunday.

Your email

Will be used in accordance with our [Privacy Policy](#).

ILLUSTRATION: YOSHI SODEOKA

The Department of Defense was among the first organizations to face large-scale surveillance overload. By the decade after September 11, its arsenal of spy technologies had grown to galactic proportions. The department had experimented with computerized fusion since at least the 1970s, but the most advanced systems still couldn't handle more than two or three data inputs. A modern intelligence unit had to contend with hundreds. According to Erik Lin-Greenberg, who ran an elite fusion team for the Air Force from 2010 to 2013, the old ways still ruled. Each human analyst was typically responsible for a single data stream. They compared their findings in chats and phone calls, or sometimes by yelling to one another across the room. In one case, Lin-Greenberg said, another team in his squadron identified an IED just in time to halt a convoy less than 500 feet up the road.

One of the people who was supposed to help fix intractable problems like this was Dan Kaufman, the director of information innovation at the [Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency](#), the Pentagon's storied R&D hub. With his sunny manner and bowl of shimmering silver hair, Kaufman wasn't cut from the camo-speckled cloth of the typical military-industrial denizen. In his previous life, he had run the video game developer DreamWorks Interactive, where he helped launch what would become the *Medal of Honor* series. Later, as a consultant, he had worked with the CIA's venture capital fund, In-Q-Tel. At Darpa, Kaufman was known for championing complex computing projects with a distinct commercial flavor. He felt that the Pentagon's fusion efforts were due for a shake-up.

In the winter of 2010, Kaufman was introduced to Ben Cutler, an experienced engineer and tech entrepreneur who was considering a tour of duty in government. Over the phone, Kaufman explained the problem to Cutler and outlined his vision for what to do about it: He wanted a software platform that could integrate all available intelligence in a single, consolidated interface and grow as new capabilities came online. For Cutler, who had spent the previous year working on a new operating system at Microsoft, the idea clicked right away. What the Pentagon needed, he realized, was an OS for surveillance.

Cutler was intrigued enough to write a pitch. The document, which he completed in a day, opens with a theatrical flourish: "A patrolling group of soldiers pursues a pickup into a village; it stops at a mosque." At this point, in real life, the soldiers might have to wait for an old-fashioned fusion team to deliver its assessment. But in Cutler's scenario, they would simply log their geographic coordinates and the pickup's license plate number into a tablet. The operating system would then return a description of the neighborhood around the mosque ("known insurgent meeting area"), a profile of the imam ("has worked well with friendly forces"), and any records connecting the vehicle with known terrorist groups.

Weeks later, Cutler was offered the job. I asked him whether he believed at the time that he had the expertise to build what he had pitched. "No!" he said, laughing a bit wildly.

To be fair, nobody did. The project, officially called Insight, would depend on a science fiction novel's worth of technical breakthroughs. A study commissioned the previous year by the National Geospatial-Intelligence Agency had concluded that many of the features that Darpa was now proposing were still far from feasible.

ILLUSTRATION: YOSHI SODEOKA

Among Insight's most difficult tasks was to find a way of associating "hard" data, meaning sensor-derived physical information like radar hits and GPS coordinates, with "soft" data such as terror watchlists and reports from informants. To link different data points in different formats, while at the same time accounting for flaws in the data itself (gaps in coverage, ambiguous signals), required extraordinarily complex math. And in order to operate on the scale Kaufman wanted—to, say, pick out a mobile phone call and correlate its soft metadata with the hard satellite imagery of the people on either end of the line—the Insight platform would need to be capable of processing thousands of gigabytes at a time.

That was just the first step. Next, Cutler's engineers would have to find a way of hardwiring the accumulated knowledge of decades of spycraft into algorithms that could interpret, like a seasoned analyst, the subtle cues that give away the enemy's intent. These algorithms would track targets across sensor feeds and databases, tracing their every move in digital and physical space, assembling what Michael Pagels, an engineer who participated in the project's drafting, called "life histories."

Still the Darpa team wouldn't be done. Cutler wanted the system to display the assembled casefile for every fighter and vehicle on a "grand chessboard"—a digital template of the physical battle space with thousands of moving pieces. Analysts would be able to click on any single one and know exactly what it was and where it had been, and take a best guess of what it might do next. And because the dynamics of battle were always shifting, the software would need a programming interface simple enough to let analysts code in new algorithms as needed.

Finally, to run simulated tests of the platform, someone would have to create a millimetrically accurate virtual battlefield populated with thousands of

realistic avatars. Will McBurnett, an engineer for one of Insight's contractors, described this to me as "*Sim City* for adults." (Here, at least, the team had a head start: One of Kaufman's earlier Darpa ventures was a made-for-the-military video game called *RealWorld*, in which soldiers could rehearse missions in a detailed virtual battlefield before heading out for the real thing. Insight drew on the same code.)

Cutler threw himself into the program, he told me, as if it were any other startup taking an idea "from inception to early market introduction." He set tight deadlines. He constantly reminded outside vendors that they were spending taxpayer dollars. To keep the focus on substance, he banned overdesigned PowerPoint presentations. By 2013, he had secured a deal to transfer the technology to the Army, which in Darpa terms was like receiving a buyout offer from Facebook. That year, an agency press release declared that Insight would "dispel the fog of war."

Darpa tested the platform repeatedly at Fort Irwin National Training Center, a vast mock battlefield in Southern California. In each weeklong exercise, "red teams" of highly trained soldiers would hide out among thousands of actors, like insurgents blending into the civilian population. Insight's job was to find them. Analysts would run the fusion system 24 hours a day, searching for the red teams in radar and lidar sweeps, drone footage, cell phone and internet data, and encyclopedic intelligence records that, as Cutler put it, "no analyst can possibly read." The system might, for instance, alert its operators whenever a vehicle from an enemy watchlist entered a certain neighborhood. It could also generate a "normalcy model" of the observed areas so that it could alert analysts to anomalies, like a car driving erratically. (The more complex patterns remain secret; many are still used to identify targets in counterterrorism operations today.)

By the time of Insight's final disclosed test, in September 2015, the Army had pivoted the program to what McBurnett called "1980s-style, full-on, armored-brigades-on-armored-brigades kind of action." I obtained a short video of one of these later iterations of the software from BAE Systems, the prime contractor for Insight. It shows Fort Irwin in "grand chessboard" mode, with an enemy artillery unit moving across the terrain. Each vehicle, tracked relentlessly through multiple data feeds, is marked with a "likely identity" and a detailed tactical life history. In the video, analysts use the

software to figure out whether the red teams will come at their forces head-on from the north or attempt a flanking maneuver from the south. As new intelligence streams in, Insight recalculates the relative likelihood of each eventuality. Soon, an alert appears in the corner of the screen: Insight predicts an 82 percent chance of an attack from the north.

ILLUSTRATION: YOSHI SODEOKA

This video clip is the outside world's first close look at Insight, and maybe also its last. In 2016, after BAE issued a short press release declaring that it was "on track to deliver" Insight to the military, the program disappeared from view. By that point, both Kaufman and Cutler had returned to the private sector; they now run blue-sky research labs at Google and Microsoft, respectively. Their successors at Darpa declined to be interviewed for this story.

Public disclosures and interviews reveal a patchy story of what happened next. According to Brian Pierce, a former senior Darpa official, the Army may have been forced to put Insight on ice because of a lawsuit that Palantir brought in 2016. The Army wanted a new surveillance platform, built in part on the foundation that Insight had laid, and Palantir protested that its off-the-shelf tools hadn't received fair consideration. (Three years later, it was awarded the replacement contract.) But elements of the Insight system did find their way to the battlefield. Its vehicle-tracking tool, for instance, was adopted by an Air Force aerial surveillance program in Afghanistan called Blue Devil, which assisted in the capture or killing of at least 1,200 people between 2011 and 2014. Dave Logan, a vice president at BAE who manages its intelligence and surveillance programs, confirmed that Insight lives on in some form: The company recently received a contract from the Air Force Research Laboratory to continue development, he said, "with the goal to market the product to Department of Defense end user communities in the future."

Insight's most enduring legacy, Pierce said, is philosophical. He likened it to the agency's work on driverless vehicles. Although Darpa [never succeeded in building](#) a fully autonomous car, he argued, it cleared a path for others by declaring—if not quite proving—that the pipe dream was within reach.



[Are AI-Powered Killer Robots Inevitable?](#)

By [PAUL SCHARRE](#)

Automated fusion now stands at the center of how the Pentagon plans to wage any future war. “It’s kind of seeped into our psyche,” Michael Kanaan, an intelligence officer who runs a joint Air Force and MIT AI accelerator, told me. He gave credit to Insight’s “trailblazing efforts” for, among other things, inspiring an automated fusion program that he oversaw at the Office of the Director of National Intelligence. Developed for the campaign against ISIS, that system condensed 24 databases into three and collapsed a 170-step investigative checklist for every tip the analysts received into a simple five-minute click-through. Kanaan said that rather than scrambling to respond to new threats as they emerged—bringing the convoy to a halt 500 feet from the IED—his team was able to “piece together the puzzle” days or weeks in advance.

Eventually, the Department of Defense hopes to link every plane, satellite, ship, tank, and soldier into a huge, mostly automated Internet of Wartime

Things. Cloud-connected sensors and weapons will correlate among themselves while commanders direct the action on a rich, continuously updated digital chessboard that senior leaders hope will look like Waze. As part of the effort, the Air Force and the Army have earmarked billions of dollars for fusion networks from dozens of defense and technology companies, including Amazon, BAE, and Anduril.

The early results of these new efforts have been striking. In one exercise in late 2019, a Pentagon fusion system found and identified an enemy ship by linking intelligence from several airplanes and a satellite. Then it passed the information to the bridge of a nearby destroyer, where all the commanding officer had to do was decide whether to launch an attack. A more recent Army experiment condensed what was traditionally a manual, 20-minute process for targeting decisions into a largely automated cycle that took just 20 seconds.

Ten years after the telephone call that kicked Insight into gear, developments like these spark a sense of validation among its creators. But their pride is tinged with something a little darker. “The vision works,” Kaufman told me over the phone. “Whether you want it to work in a civilian situation or not is”—he paused—“a debatable question.” Cutler was firmer. “I would not undertake something like Insight in a civilian context,” he said.

ILLUSTRATION: YOSHI SODEOKA

The first time I was given the keys to a correlation engine, I was standing not in Genetec’s flashy Experience Center but in a grubby Irish pub in midtown Manhattan. On the edges of a social gathering, an NYPD official pulled me aside, said he had something to show me, and took an iPhone out of his pocket.

The phone, he explained, was loaded with a mobile version of the Domain Awareness System, the NYPD’s multi-intelligence fusion network. The network was launched in 2009 as a relatively modest attempt by the NYPD’s Counterterrorism Bureau to process CCTV footage from around Ground Zero in a central command hub. Microsoft got the main contract, and Genetec and other companies chipped in. Over the years, the system’s mandate expanded from counterterrorism to general police work, and the

NYPD extended the dragnet from Lower Manhattan to all five boroughs. (In a profit-sharing agreement with the city, Microsoft has also sold the system to several US federal security agencies, along with the governments of Bulgaria, Rio de Janeiro, and Singapore, among others.) The software, which draws on many of the same sources as Citigraf, is available to all 36,000 officers on the force.

The NYPD official showed me how he could pull up any city resident's rap sheet, lists of their known associates, cases in which they were named as a victim of a crime or as a witness, and, if they had a car, a heatmap of where they tended to drive and a full history of their parking violations. Then he handed me the phone. Go ahead, he said; search a name.

A flurry of people came to mind: Friends. Lovers. *Enemies*. In the end, I chose the victim of a shooting I'd witnessed in Brooklyn a couple of years earlier. He popped right up, along with what felt like more personal information than I, or even perhaps a curious officer, had any right to know without a court order. Feeling a little dizzy, I gave the phone back.

A couple of months later, I met up with Christian Schnedler, a hulking computer engineer with wraparound Oakleys and a tribal shoulder tattoo that peeked out from one arm of his tight khaki tee. Schnedler had his first encounter with the Domain Awareness System in 2011, as a Genetec employee, and he'd found the experience dizzying too. Far from being spooked, though, he thought the whole concept of fusion was "genius." The following year, he joined IBM, another NYPD contractor, and was posted to Dubai to help drive sales of the company's "city management" products in the Middle East and North Africa. He set out on the job thoroughly convinced of the technology's unmitigated potential for good, even in a civilian context. But that soon changed.

One of Schnedler's first sales meetings was with the Egyptian Ministry of the Interior, not long after the Muslim Brotherhood swept to power in the wake of the Arab Spring. In Schnedler's retelling, ministry officials said that they wanted software to pick out the networks of "terrorists," "protesters," and "agitators" threatening the country's newfound peace.

Schnedler knew that this was technically feasible. But he also imagined that “protesters,” “terrorists,” and “agitators” in this context probably also referred to various political and religious minority groups, including Egypt’s long marginalized Coptic community. A devout Christian, Schnedler realized that the same technology that had so thoroughly persuaded him in New York could be turned into a sharp instrument of algorithmic authoritarianism, just as useful for rounding up networks of congregants as it was for mapping criminal organizations. He was relieved when the Egyptian government ultimately failed to follow through with a formal solicitation.

The following year, Schnedler was invited to Turkey, where police at Ankara’s central surveillance center proudly showed him a system that seemed directly inspired by New York’s. In a back room, a chain-smoking senior officer asked Schnedler whether he could build software that would identify masked protesters by correlating the tattoos on their forearms—which they’d often expose momentarily when throwing rocks—with a database of such markings that his government had been assembling. Again, Schnedler knew that this was technically feasible. Again, he worried about how it might be used against Turkey’s Christian population. (The officer didn’t follow up in the remaining time that Schnedler was at IBM.)

The final straw came for Schnedler in the spring of 2015, when he was invited back to Cairo. A new government greeted him this time—the Muslim Brotherhood had been ousted in 2013—and a new set of Interior Ministry officials wanted to stamp out threats to the country’s security. Threats, Schnedler noted with a tinge of amusement, that would now also include members of the very party that had tried to enlist his services before. (To his knowledge, no deal materialized.) He returned to the United States that fall having learned an important lesson: “To the extent that you do not trust your government, you do not want your government to build these systems.”

Such encounters are common in the fusion industry. Genetec’s Gaccione says he often has to tell prospective customers “that’s not what we do.” Particularly with the computing power and analytics tools readily available through the cloud, fusion could enable “a lot of crazy stuff,” he said. One government, which he refused to name, issued a solicitation for a tool that would mesh facial recognition cameras and mobile phone networks to track

citizens wherever they went. “I didn’t get through like eight pages before we threw it out,” he said.

ILLUSTRATION: YOSHI SODEOKA

In the United States, there are no specific national rules governing fusion technology. Absent a legal challenge to test its constitutional integrity, there’s little to say that you can’t blend data sets together, even if doing so might generate information that investigators would otherwise have needed a court order to obtain. In the absence of stricter regulations, Genetec has developed a series of safeguards for its software. One feature, which is optional, automatically blurs all faces in CCTV footage. And if an analyst wants to see where a vehicle has been, he needs to enter a case number to activate the search; that way, he can’t snoop on his girlfriend.

But the uncomfortable truth is that fusion’s more dystopian incarnations are already out in the world. Dahlia Peterson, a research analyst at Georgetown’s Center for Security and Emerging Technology, told me that fusion architectures are central to the Chinese government’s campaign against dissidents and minority citizens, particularly the Uighur Muslim group. One such system, the Integrated Joint Operations Platform, fuses together facial recognition scans from CCTV cameras; financial, medical, and criminal records; hardware identifiers from smartphones and computers; even mandatory questionnaires that ask residents, among other things, how many times they pray each day. According to reporting by *The New York Times*, a cloud computing center in Xinjiang, powered in part by chips from Nvidia, can comb through hundreds of millions of photos and reports from the area’s many checkpoints while applying real-time analytics to up to 1,000 CCTV cameras simultaneously. Authorities use the life histories generated by these systems to determine who is “trustworthy.” Those who aren’t often risk being sent to prison or a reeducation camp.

In modern life, we’re rarely not in the crosshairs of some spying device or other. We rush by a license plate reader on our way to work, a few blocks from a burglary that’s being patternized. As we walk from the parking lot to the gym, or the mosque, we’re picked up on a dozen CCTVs. We attend a protest under the watchful eye of a drone. Our smartphones log our every move, our every click, and our every like. But no single one of these

machines, when used in isolation, is omniscient. The fact that intelligence can be difficult and tedious to correlate was perhaps the last natural rampart standing between us and total surveillance. The little privacy we have left exists in the spaces between each data point.

Fusion technology eviscerates those spaces. With the click of an “INVESTIGATE” button, our digital footprints, once scattered, become a single uninterrupted life history, leaving not only our enemies, but also our friends and our lovers, with nowhere to hide.

This story has been updated to clarify Dave Logan’s VP role at BAE Systems.

This article was downloaded by **calibre** from <https://www.wired.com/story/there-are-spying-eyes-everywhere-and-now-they-share-a-brain/>

| [Section menu](#) | [Main menu](#) |

[Saira Mueller](#)

[Culture](#)

02.04.2021 07:00 AM

The Sims Made Me Realize I'm Ready for More In Life

I'm ready for a partner and kids—and if you're a little more mindful while playing, you just might realize something about yourself, too.


 An abstract scene with feet and a dark puddle.

Illustration: David Alabo

In a bid to feel in control of *something* in my life during this damn pandemic, I turned to *The Sims*. What I got instead was unexpected, yet far more important—mindfulness and clarity. It can likely do the same for you.

My most recent playthrough of *The Sims 4* started at Thanksgiving. Well, more accurately, following Cyber Monday, when I randomly dropped \$60.52 on four expansion, game, and stuff packs despite not having played the game for two years. Why did I do this? Who knows. Let's blame the food coma. I've been playing *The Sims* since the original game was released 21 years ago (on February 4, 2000), and most of my playthroughs involve me building a parallel, alternate, or idyllic version of my own life. (Shoutout to the versions of me in other dimensions who perhaps made some better choices and are chilling on a boat in the Mediterranean right now!) This time was no different.

I spent, as I usually do, a lot of time in [Create A Sim](#) picking my interests and outfits for various seasons and social scenarios. “*Who am I?*” is always the major theme during this portion of gameplay. How honest I am with myself when picking these depends on the day and what's going on in my real life. This time, I went with accuracy: My Sim wanted to be a writer and

was nerdy, adventurous, and liked reading books. While I have rarely changed out of my pajamas over the past year, and even then have rotated through the same four outfits, my Sim was rocking the latest fashion—from ballgowns to swimsuits. Then I created my cat, Gatsby, because I can’t live without him even in the digital world.

My Sim is wearing my usual black jacket and jeans, while Gatsby enjoys some cuddles, just like he does IRL.

Electronic Arts via Saira Mueller

After moving my Sim into her new apartment in San Myshuno, spending hours decking it out to somewhat resemble my current home (shoutout to [the money cheats](#)), and immediately signing her up for a career in writing, I did something I don’t usually do—I saved my game and went back to Create A Sim to build myself a partner and move him into the same city. I then spent more time than I care to mention running the Sim version of me around the city trying to “randomly” bump into him. (Unfortunately, there are no dating apps in *The Sims*—although you can [mod the game to add one](#)—and meet-cutes are harder to come by when you have a specific person in mind.) And that’s when it hit me: I’m ready, like *actually* ready, for a (hopefully) life-long partner and kids. That day, I resolved to be more open and honest with my dates about what I’m looking for to ensure we are on the same page early on, and it has made dating so much easier—and less stressful—already. Like when I had a deep conversation with a guy I had just started dating and he told me he never wants kids—all I could think was: “Crisis averted! And now I have a new good friend.”

I’m not alone in this lightbulb moment thanks to *The Sims*. Nor am I the first person to start acting on it IRL. My thesis: If we were all a little more mindful of our actions in *The Sims* and what it means for us in our real lives, we’d be much better off.

This article was downloaded by **calibre** from <https://www.wired.com/story/sims-game-psychology/>

[Jason Kehe](#)

[Culture](#)

02.02.2021 08:00 AM

The No-Good Very Nasty Remastering of *The Lord of the Rings*

In correcting every imperfection and sharpening every blur of his epic fantasy trilogy, Peter Jackson has violated a fundamental law of nature.

lord of the rings still a woman

The poor-ish, inconsistently color-graded, visually outdated images of *Lord of the Rings* work—in a very literal, but also cosmic, sort of way—because they look, by contemporary standards, imperfect. Because they look blurry and out of date: like relics from the past. Photograph: Warner Bros/Everett Collection

Look, I see why Peter Jackson did it. Why he rereleased, in December of last year, his [Lord of the Rings](#) trilogy, along with *The Nasty Hobbitses*—as I like to call them, channeling Gollum—in so-called “4K Ultra HD” (a redundancy). It’s a very 21st-century-filmmaker thing to do, this remastering business. Enrich the colors, sharpen the images, and your films hold up down through the ages. It’s practically a moral obligation, a question of clarity, of being clear, and if you *can* clarify Legolas by pumping an extra 10 million pixels into his perfect Elven pores, which comes out to something like 100 billion photons, all twinkling immortally through the cosmic sweep of spacetime, why then, *shouldn’t* you?

If there’s anything humans demand in this life, it’s that. Greater *clarity*. Just speak clearly, you scream—at politicians, at therapists, at spouses. Also at me, for writing such a muddy first paragraph. God, it really is a mess.

Sinful, even, so wordy and wasteful. If clarity, like its cousin cleanliness, is indeed next to godliness—and it is; the word, in the original Middle English, meant “glory, divine splendor”—then to be unclear is to be unethical. Or un-optical, as it were, since optics are the new ethics, at least in corporate America, where all they do is seek *clarity* on this, *visibility* into that. I mean, could I be any more clear?

More than likely, so let me try again. Here’s how I should have started this essay: In 2020, everybody went a little bit blind.

Because that was Covid for you, in a sense: a great, glaring crisis of seeing. Stuck inside, people couldn’t *see* as they were used to seeing. They couldn’t see their friends and family, except on screens. They couldn’t see movies or shows or plays, except on screens. And they couldn’t see when the crisis would end, not even on screens. If this simulation called reality was crackling along in hi-def in the Before Times, it dropped to something like standard definition in 2020, went all glitchy and grainy. Sorry, this connection stinks.

As the outside world blurred, though, the inside world up-rezzed. Screens were all that remained, so they got sharper, prettier, denser, clearer. Everything you’d *think* had a record-breaking year in sales, did: big-screen TVs, with their UHDs and HDRs; iPhone 12s, with their OLED displays and 5G speeds; Oculus Quest 2s, now with 50 percent more pixels. Salvation would be achieved through clarity, and there was no resolution better suited to the times than something called 4K.

Not a new standard, of course; it began to show up in the mid-2010s. But “cocooning at home” during the pandemic, as one industry exec [put it](#), “has accelerated interest in 4K.” Let’s recast the metaphor: HD was the caterpillar, and 4K the butterfly, bursting forth from its Covid chrysalis and crystallizing entertainment at quadruple the pixel density. The colors were dazzling, a truly heightened display. Classics like *Lawrence of Arabia* and the Hitchcock collection all the way down to every last *Rambo* and *Resident Evil* were 4K’d in 2020, not to mention video games, TV shows, and *Top Gun* to boot. Binge-watchers had been blind; now, they could see.

So look. I get why Peter Jackson capitalized on the accelerated interest. Why he remastered his trilogies in 4K, and just in time for the holiday season of a year in which an acute crisis of seeing collided with a chronic resolution fetish to produce a new market for the illusion of reality. But let me be clear. Crystal, if I can: What a no-good, anti-human, un-optical thing for this man to do.

Peter Jackson has never met a special effect he hasn't tried to perfect. From the nontechnical and old-fashioned, like forcing perspectives so Frodo looks small, to the next-gen and physics-defying, like mo-capping a bipedal human actor into a four-legged fire-breathing dragon, he's a master manipulator of bodies in space. In the case of *Lord of the Rings*, it worked. Magically. Little people convincingly and very emotionally saved an enormous world. Then he made *The Nasty Hobbitses*.

As a book, *The Hobbit* is everything *LotR* is not: short, silly, and stupid. Not that Jackson understood this. When he read it, he mainly saw that big scary dragon. In fact, he has suggested that he couldn't make the films until the effects for such a beast were ready for him to exploit. Instead of thinking about how to make the story of an annoying middle-aged shut-in forced to venture outside actually, you know, compellingly tellable, he was thinking visually. And financially. It would be *three* movies, then—silly, stupid, and not at all short.

But that's not the worst part. The worst part is that he seems to think he succeeded. That the *look* of these movies, pixels flashing in 48 hyperreal frames per second, is enough to justify their existence. So much so that he'd come to look back on *Lord of the Rings* with regret. Over the years, the "imperfections" in his original trilogy began, in his mind, to show.

Hence the 4K remaster. "We got the opportunity to go back and to remove and paint out any imperfections," he says in a [promotional video](#) for the new Blu-rays, as animators retouch the scene with the Balrog. "It's fun to have all the toys now. I sure didn't have all this stuff to play with in the old days." Now that he does, all six movies consist, Jackson says, of "pristine," "sharp," "ultra-crisp" images.

In her essay “In Defense of the Poor Image,” the filmmaker and media theorist Hito Steyerl defines an imperfect cinema as “resolutely compromised: blurred, amateurish, and full of artifacts.” She’s talking about underground, anti-elitist, anti-capitalist art, which Jackson’s cinema is, resolutely, far from. But the poor-ish, inconsistently color-graded, visually outdated images of his *Lord of the Rings* can be defended on similar grounds. The reason they work—in a very literal, but also cosmic, sort of way—is precisely because they look, by contemporary standards, imperfect. Because they look blurry and out of date: like relics from the past.

What humans perceive as the linear flow of time—first Jackson made *The Lord of the Rings*, and then he made *The Nasty Hobbitses*—is tied, very deeply if mostly unfathomably, to the direction of entropy. If you saw Christopher Nolan’s latest VFX showcase, *Tenet*, you might follow. Or not; that empty excuse for a film won’t make sense in any era, at any time. What’s known is this: The early universe had more order to it, and the universe today has less. The glass breaks, disorder increases, and time seems to move forward.

But who’s to say the broken glass, or the much-invoked deck of cards that *was* arranged numerically and by color but *now* is shuffled and therefore disordered, makes any less sense in its chaotic form? “The notion of certain configurations being more particular than others (26 red cards followed by 26 black cards, for example) makes sense only if I limit myself to noticing only certain aspects of the cards (in this case, the colors),” writes the theoretical physicist Carlo Rovelli in *The Order of Time* (like *A Brief History of*, but beautifully written). “If I distinguish between all the cards, the configurations are all equivalent: None of them is more or less particular than others.” Of course, the human brain cannot make such fine-grained distinctions. As the cards are shuffled, the brain loses track of any meaningful relationship between them. The patterns and particularities, once so apparent, are now said to *blur*. “The difference between past and future,” Rovelli writes, “is deeply linked to this blurring.”

Confused? Let me try to be clearer: When things get *unclear*, you know time is passing. Blurring is the reason people can exist as physical beings in time. If your brain could somehow perceive a broken glass as a pattern

identical to that of the unshattered glass—because, on a subatomic level, they basically *are* the same—you would transcend time. But you can't. So you're stuck here. Living, and inevitably dying, in a world where the imperfectly perfect *Nasty Hobbitses* are the standard by which Peter Jackson judges his perfectly imperfect *Lord of the Rings*. Where he remasters the latter in the style of the former, a violation of nature, of the order of time.

In a way, it's God's work. By fine-tuning his images, by increasing their resolution, Jackson is making the patterns easier to perceive. He's de-blurring the meaning behind the shuffled deck, sculpting richer life from the mud of the past. But Jackson is not God, he's a director of high fantasy, and that's the wrong genre to unentropically reengineer. All stories should be allowed to get blurry in our memories of them, but fantasies most of all, because they're so close to our dreams. We don't dream in high resolution. We wake up, and the dragons fade.

Look, I can write a clear sentence: Peter Jackson should not have remastered *The Lord of the Rings*. Here's another: Covid makes it hard to think about the future. Or I can write a blurred, amateurish essay instead, full of artifacts and stray thoughts, imperfections and improbabilities, that might suggest something more. Something about vision, about seeing a way forward. Something about heaven, and the unclarities that help get us there.

This article was downloaded by **calibre** from <https://www.wired.com/story/no-good-very-nasty-remastering-the-lord-of-the-rings/>

| [Section menu](#) | [Main menu](#) |

By [Elliot Ackerman](#) and [Admiral James Stavridis](#)

[Backchannel](#)

02.02.2021 07:00 AM

2034, Part II: Blackout in Washington, DC

“So much was happening—the *Wén Rui*, the F-35, Air Force One, which had seemed to vanish—and yet they had no news. Everything had been compromised.”



soldiers with guns drawn on a person who is cuffed and blindfolded

Illustration: Owen Freeman

18:42 MARCH 12, 2034 (GMT-4)

WASHINGTON, D.C., EN ROUTE TO BEIJING

Anyone who lived through the war could tell you where they were the moment the power went out. Captain Sarah Hunt had been on the bridge of the *John Paul Jones*, fighting to keep her flagship afloat while trying to ignore the panicked cries coming from belowdecks. Wedge had his wrists flex-cuffed in the small of his back as he was driven blindfolded under armed escort across the tarmac of Bandar Abbas airfield. Lin Bao had recently departed Dulles International Airport on a Gulfstream 900, one of a suite of private jets made available to members of the Central Military Commission.

Lin Bao had, over the course of his thirty-year career, flown on these jets from time to time, either as part of a delegation to an international conference or when escorting a minister or other senior-level official. However, he'd never before had one of these jets sent for him alone, a fact that signified the importance of the mission he'd now completed. Lin Bao had placed his call to Chowdhury right after takeoff, while the flight attendants were still belted into their jump seats. The Gulfstream had been ascending, cresting one thousand feet, when he hung up with Chowdhury and sent an encrypted message to the Central Military Commission, confirming that this final call had been placed. When he pressed send on that message the response was immediate, as though he had thrown a switch. Below him, the scattered lights of Washington went dark and then came right back on. Like a blink.

Lin Bao was thinking of that blink while he watched the eastern seaboard slip beneath the Gulfstream, as they struck out into international airspace and across the dark expanse of the Atlantic. He thought about time and how in English they say, *it passes in the blink of an eye*. While he sat alone on the plane, in this liminal space between nations, he felt as though his entire career had built to this one moment. Everything before this day—from his time at the academy, to his years shuffling from assignment to assignment in the fleet, to his study and later grooming in diplomatic postings—had been one stage after another in a larger plan, like a mountain's ascent. And here he stood at the summit.

He glanced once more out of his window, as if expecting to find a view that he might admire from such a height. There was only the darkness. The night sky without stars. The ocean below him. Onto that void, his imagination projected events he knew to be in progress half a world away. He could see the bridge of the carrier *Zheng He*, and Rear Admiral Ma Qiang, who commanded that battle group. The trajectory of Lin Bao's life, which had made him the American defense attaché at this moment, had been set by his government years ago, and it was every bit as deliberate as the trajectory set for Ma Qiang, whose carrier battle group was the perfect instrument to assert their nation's sovereignty over its territorial waters. If their parallel trajectories weren't known to them in the earliest days of their careers, when they'd been contemporaries as naval cadets, they could have been intuited. Ma Qiang had been an upperclassman, heir to an illustrious military family, his father and grandfather both admirals, part of the naval aristocracy. Ma Qiang had a reputation for cold competence and cruelty, particularly when it came to hazing underclassmen, one of whom was Lin Bao. In those days Lin Bao, an academic prodigy, had proven an easy target. Despite eventually graduating first in his class, with the highest scholastic record the faculty could remember, he'd arrived as a sniveling, homesick boy of half-American, half-Chinese descent. This split heritage made him particularly vulnerable, not only to derision but also to the suspicions of his classmates—particularly Ma Qiang.

But that was all a long time ago. Ultimately, it was Lin Bao's mixed heritage from which his government derived his value, eventually leading him to his current position, and it was Ma Qiang's competence and cruelty

that made him the optimal commander of a fleet that at this moment was striking a long-anticipated blow against the Americans. Everyone played their role. Everyone did their part.

Part of Lin Bao wished he were the one standing on the bridge of the *Zheng He*, with the power of an entire carrier battle group arrayed in attack formation behind him. After all, he was a naval officer who had also held command at sea. But what offset this desire, or any jealousy he felt about his old classmate Ma Qiang's posting, was a specific knowledge he possessed. He was one of only a half dozen people who understood the scope of current events.

Ma Qiang and the thousands of sailors under his command had no idea that on the other side of the globe an American F-35 stealth fighter had been grounded by a previously unknown cyber capability their government had deployed on behalf of the Iranians, nor how this action was related to his own mission. Those qualities Lin Bao had always admired in the Americans—their moral certitude, their single-minded determination, their blithe optimism—undermined them at this moment as they struggled to find a solution to a problem they didn't understand.

Our strengths become our weaknesses, thought Lin Bao. Always.

The American narrative was that they had captured the *Wén Rui*, a ship laden with sensitive technologies that Lin Bao's government would do anything to retrieve. For the *Wén Rui*'s capture to precipitate the desired crisis, Lin Bao's government would need a bargaining chip to force the Americans' hand; that's where the grounded F-35 came in. Lin Bao knew that the Americans would then follow a familiar series of moves and countermoves, a choreography the two nations had stepped through many times before: A crisis would lead to posturing, then to a bit of brinksmanship, and eventually to de-escalation and a trade. In this case, the F-35 would be traded for the *Wén Rui*. Lin Bao knew, and his superiors knew, that it would never occur to the Americans that pilfering the sensitive technology on the F-35 was a secondary objective for their adversary and that whatever was on the *Wén Rui* was of little value. The Americans wouldn't understand, or at least not until it was too late, that what Lin Bao's government wanted was simply the crisis itself, one that would allow them

to strike in the South China Sea. What the Americans lacked—or lost somewhere along the way—was imagination. As it was said of the 9/11 attacks, it would also be said of the *Wén Rui* incident: It was not a failure of American intelligence but rather a failure of American imagination. And the more the Americans struggled, the more trapped they would become.

Lin Bao remembered a puzzle he'd seen in a novelty shop in Cambridge, when he'd been studying at Harvard's Kennedy School. It was a tube made of a woven mesh material. The man behind the counter of the store had seen him looking at the puzzle, trying to figure out what it was. “You stick your fingers in either end,” he had said in one of those thick Boston accents Lin Bao always struggled to understand. Lin Bao did as he was told. When he went to remove his fingers, the woven mesh cinched down. The more he tugged, the more tightly his fingers became stuck. The man behind the counter laughed and laughed. “You've never seen that before?” Lin Bao shook his head, no. The man laughed even harder, and then said, “It's called a Chinese finger trap.”

Catch Every Chapter in This Series

Sign up to automatically receive all six installments of 2034 in your inbox.

Your email

Will be used in accordance with our [Privacy Policy](#).

05:17 MARCH 13, 2034 (GMT+4:30)

BANDAR ABBAS

Brigadier General Qassem Farshad sat on a plastic fold-out chair in an empty office next to one of the holding cells. It was early in the morning, and he was in a sour mood. But no one seemed to notice, because his appearance was always fearsome. His reputation equally so. This made it difficult to gauge his moods, as his expression at rest seemed to convey mild annoyance or even low-level rage, depending on who was looking at him. Farshad had scars, plenty of them. Most prominent was his right hand, where he'd lost his pinkie and ring finger when assembling an IED in Sadr City on his first assignment as a young lieutenant. This misstep had almost

cost him his job within the elite Quds Force. But Farshad's namesake, Major General Qassem Soleimani, the commander of the Quds Force, had intervened, blaming the incident on the incompetence of the Jaish al-Mahdi militiamen whom Farshad was advising.

This was the only time in his more than thirty years working within the Quds Force that Farshad had ever used his special connection with Soleimani to his advantage. His father, who had achieved the rank of lieutenant colonel, had died subverting an assassination attempt on Soleimani's life weeks before Farshad was born. The particulars of that incident had always remained shrouded in mystery, but the idea that Soleimani—one of the great protectors of the Islamic Republic—owed a debt to the elder Farshad lent the younger's career an aura of mystique as he ascended the ranks of the Revolutionary Guards. This mystique endured even after Soleimani's death, magnified by Farshad's inherent competence and daring.

The history of his exploits was etched across his body in scar tissue. When advising Syrian government forces in the Battle of Aleppo, a piece of shrapnel from a mortar had sliced a tidy diagonal gash from above his eyebrow to below his cheek. When advancing on Herat after the 2026 collapse of Afghanistan's last Kabul-based national government, a sniper's bullet had passed through his neck, missing his jugular and arteries, leaving a coin-sized entrance hole at one side of his neck and the same-sized exit wound at the other. That scar made his neck appear like Frankenstein's with the bolts removed, which inevitably led to a nickname among the younger troopers. And lastly, in the battle that was the pinnacle of his career, he'd led a regiment of Revolutionary Guards in the final assault to retake the Golan Heights in 2030. In this, his crowning achievement, the one that would earn him his nation's highest award for valor, the Order of Fath, the retreating Israelis had fired a cowardly but lucky rocket that had struck beside him, killing his radio operator and severing his right leg below the knee. He still limped slightly from this wound, although Farshad hiked three miles each morning on a well-fitted prosthetic.

The missing fingers. The scar on his face. The leg lost below the knee. All those wounds were on his right side. His left side—apart from the scar on

his neck—had never been touched. If his troopers called him “Padishah Frankenstein” (which translated to English as “Great King Frankenstein”), the intelligence analysts at Langley had given him a different nickname, one that corresponded with his psychological profile. That name was “Dr. Jekyll and Mr. Hyde.” Farshad was a man with two sides, the one with the scars and the one without. He was capable of great kindness but also great rage. And that rageful side, the one that easily moved him into his reckless tempers, was very much present now as he waited in the empty office next to the holding cell at Bandar Abbas.

Five weeks before, the General Staff of the Armed Forces had issued Farshad his orders directly. His government planned to down an American F-35, and Farshad was to interrogate the pilot. He would have two days to extract a confession. The plan was to create one of those videos his government could use to shame the Americans. After that, the pilot would be released, and the aircraft's technology exploited and then destroyed. When Farshad protested that this was the work of an interrogator far junior to him in rank, he was told that he was the most junior person who could be entrusted with so sensitive a task. This could, the General Staff had explained, bring their two nations to the brink of war. The incident his government would precipitate was delicate. And so Farshad had been ordered to remain at this remote airfield for more than a month, waiting for the Americans to fly their plane overhead.

I've been reduced to this, Farshad thought bitterly. The most junior man who can be trusted.

Gone were his days of active service. Farshad had accumulated all of the scars he ever would. He remembered General Soleimani's end. When the Americans killed him, cancer had already developed in his throat and was slowly eating the great commander alive. Several times over those months, the disease had confined his father's old friend to his bed. During a particularly dire episode, he had summoned Farshad to his modest country house in Qanat-e Malek, a hamlet three hours' drive outside of Tehran where Soleimani had been born. The audience hadn't lasted long. Farshad was brought to the general's bedside, and he could see slow death in the smile that greeted him, the way Soleimani's gums had receded, the purple-

white shade of his chapped lips. He told Farshad in a raspy voice that his father had been the lucky one, to be martyred, to never grow old, this was what all soldiers secretly desired, and he wished a warrior's death for the son of his old friend. Before Farshad could answer, Soleimani abruptly dismissed him. As he traveled out of the house, he could hear the old man retching pathetically from behind his closed door. Two months later, Soleimani's great adversary, the Americans, would grant him the most generous of gifts: a warrior's death.

Waiting in the empty office in Bandar Abbas, Farshad thought again of that last meeting with Soleimani. He felt certain his fate wouldn't be like his father's. His fate would be to die in his bed, like the old general nearly had. And if he was in a sour mood that day at Bandar Abbas, it was because of this. Another war was brewing—he could feel it—and it would be the first war in his life from which he wouldn't walk away with a scar.

A young trooper with a freshly washed and perfectly creased uniform stood at the door. “Brigadier Farshad, sir ...”

He looked up, his gaze eager to the point of cruelty. “What is it?”

“The prisoner is ready for you now.”

Farshad stood slowly. He pushed his way past the young trooper, toward the cell with the American. Whether he liked it or not, Farshad still had a job to do.

21:02 MARCH 12, 2034 (GMT-4)
WASHINGTON, D.C.

Sandy Chowdhury knew the situation was bad. Their government email accounts, their government cell phones, even the vending machine that took credit cards and operated off a government IP address—all of it was down. No one could log in. Not a single password worked. They'd been locked out of everything. *This is bad, this is bad, this is bad*; it was all Chowdhury could think.

He couldn't contact Central Command or the Indo-Pacific Command, and his imagination raced as he projected a host of possible outcomes for the F-35 they'd lost, as well as the fate of the *John Paul Jones* and its sister ships in the South China Sea. In this gathering panic, Chowdhury's thoughts wandered unexpectedly.

A memory kept reoccurring.

When he was in high school in Northern Virginia, he'd run hurdles. He was quite good too, until an accident curtailed his track career. He'd broken an ankle on the anchor leg of the 4 x 400-meter relay. It was junior year, at the regional championships. When he fell on the track, he could feel his skinned knee and palms, the burn of sweat in those cuts, but he couldn't feel his badly broken ankle. He simply sat there in the middle of the race, his competitors passing him by, staring dumbfounded at his foot as it dangled numbly from the bottom of the joint. He knew how much it would soon hurt, but it hadn't started hurting yet.

That was what this moment was like; he knew something had broken, but he felt nothing.

Chowdhury, Hendrickson, and their modest staff scrambled about, tapping at keyboards, unplugging and replugging phones that refused to give a dial tone, troubleshooting systems that refused to be troubleshot. Air Force One had been scheduled to land at Andrews more than an hour ago, but there was still no word as to its status. There was no way to get a call into Andrews. Their personal cell phones worked, but no one wanted to dial through an unsecured line, particularly after Lin Bao had proven to Chowdhury that his own phone had been compromised.

This excerpt appears in the February 2021 issue. [Subscribe to WIRED.](#)

Illustration: Owen Freeman

Time passed strangely in the hours after the blackout. Everyone knew the minutes were critical, everyone could intuit that events of the type that shape history were unfolding at this very moment. But no one understood their form; no one understood what those events were or what that history

would be. So much was happening—the *Wén Rui*, the F-35, Air Force One, which had seemed to vanish—and yet they had no news. Frantic as they were to understand the scope of this attack, they couldn't even make a secure phone call. Everything had been compromised.

They carried on in a general, ineffectual frenzy, with Chowdhury and Hendrickson bunkered up in the Situation Room, leaning over its conference table, scribbling on legal pads, hatching plans and then discarding them. Until after a few hours Chowdhury's boss, Trent Wisecarver, the national security advisor, stood in the open doorway.

At first they didn't notice him.

“Sandy,” he said.

Chowdhury glanced up, stupefied. “Sir?”

Decades before, Wisecarver had played tailback at West Point, and he still looked the part. His shirtsleeves were rolled up over his thick forearms, his tie was loosened around his trunk of a neck, and his flop of salt-and-pepper hair was uncombed. He wore a pair of frameless eyeglasses (he was severely myopic) and looked as though he'd slept in his rumpled Brooks Brothers suit. “How much cash do you have?”

“Sir?”

“Cash. I need eighty bucks. My government credit card isn't working.”

Chowdhury fished through his pockets, as did Hendrickson. Between them they came up with seventy-six dollars, three of which were in quarters. Chowdhury was passing the handful of coins and the crumple of bills to Wisecarver as they marched from the West Wing out toward the White House vestibule and North Lawn, where, pulled up on the curved driveway by the fountain, there was a metro taxi. A uniformed Secret Service guard handed Chowdhury the taxi driver's license and registration and then returned to his post. Chowdhury's boss curtly explained that his plane had been forced to divert to Dulles and land under the guise of a civilian aircraft. That meant no escort to meet them, no Secret Service motorcade,

no elaborate security detail. POTUS herself was due back at Andrews within the hour. From Air Force One her communications proved limited; she could reach the four-star commanding general at Strategic Command and had spoken to the VP, but these carve-outs in their communications hierarchy were clearly designed by whoever instigated the attack as a way to avoid an inadvertent nuclear escalation. Beijing (or whoever did this) surely knew that if she had no communications with her nuclear capability, protocols were in place for an automatic preemptive strike. She did, however, have no direct communications with the secretary of defense or any of her combatant commanders in the field other than Strategic Command. Establishing contact with them was Wisecarver's job. Refusing to wait for official travel arrangements when his plane landed, he had rushed into the main terminal at Dulles and gotten in a cab so he'd have communications working at the White House by the time POTUS arrived. And here Wisecarver was, without a dime to pay the fare.

Chowdhury examined the taxi's registration. The driver was an immigrant, South Asian, with a last name from the same part of India as Chowdhury's own family. When Chowdhury stepped to the taxi's window to hand back the documents, he thought to mention something about it but decided not to. This wasn't the time or the place. Wisecarver then paid the driver, meticulously counting out the fare from the wad of cash and coins, while the twitchy Secret Service agent he'd traveled with scanned in every direction for threats, whether real or imagined.

10:22 MARCH 13, 2034 (GMT+8)
BEIJING

Lin Bao hadn't slept much on the flight. When the Gulfstream touched down, he was shepherded by a heavily armed official escort—dark suits, dark sunglasses, concealed weapons—to the Ministry of National Defense headquarters, an ominous building in the heart of the smog-choked capital. Lin Bao guessed his escorts were officers of the Ministry of State Security but couldn't be sure. Without a *hello* or *goodbye* or any pleasantries whatsoever, they brought him up to a windowless conference room on the building's sixth floor and shut the door behind them.

Lin Bao waited. The conference table in the room's center was massive, designed to receive international delegations and to host negotiations of the highest sensitivity. In a vase at the center of the table were some flowers, peace lilies, one of the few species that required no sunlight to grow. Lin Bao ran his fingers beneath their white, silky petals and couldn't help but appreciate the irony of the choice in this place.

Also on the table were two silver platters, piled with packets of M&M's. He noticed the writing on the packets: It was in English.

Two double doors at the opposite end of the conference room swung open. Startled, Lin Bao sat up straight.

Mid-level military officers flowed into the room, dropping down a projection screen, establishing a secure video-teleconference connection, and arraying fresh pitchers of water on the table. Then, like a tidal surge, they moved back through the door as quickly as they had appeared. In their wake a diminutive man entered the room, his chest glinting with a field of medals. He wore a tobacco-colored dress uniform made of fine but poorly cut fabric, the sleeves extending almost to his knuckles. His demeanor was gregarious and his earlobes pendulous, framing a very round face whose full cheeks creased in a fixed smile. His arm was extended in a handshake like an electric plug in search of a socket. "Admiral Lin Bao, Admiral Lin Bao," he repeated, turning the name into a song, a triumphal anthem. "Congratulations. You have done *very* well."

Lin Bao had never met Defense Minister General Chiang, but that face was as familiar as his own. How often had he seen it hung in one of those hierarchical portrait collages that adorned the anodyne military buildings in which he'd spent his career? It was the minister's smile that set him apart from the rest of the party officials who so assiduously cultivated their dour expressions for the photographer. His habitual courtesy, which could have been interpreted as weakness, was the smooth sheath that contained the force of his office. Minister Chiang gestured toward the silver platters spread across the conference table. "You haven't touched your M&M's," he said, barely suppressing a laugh.

Lin Bao felt a sense of foreboding. If he assumed that Minister Chiang and the Central Military Commission had recalled him for a debriefing, he was quickly disabused of this belief. They knew everything already, including the smallest of details. Every exchange. Every gesture. Every word. Down to a single comment made about M&M's. This was the point of the platters: to let Lin Bao know that nothing escaped their attention, lest he come to believe that any individual might assume an outsize role in this enterprise, lest he ever think that any one person could become greater than a single cog in the vast machinery of the People's Republic—their republic.

Minister Chiang reclined in his plush office chair at the head of the conference table. He gestured for Lin Bao to sit beside him. Although Lin Bao had served nearly thirty years in his country's navy, this was the first time he'd ever met directly with a member of the Central Military Commission. When he'd studied at Harvard's Kennedy School as a junior officer and later at the US Naval War College in Newport as a mid-level officer, and when he'd attended exercises with his Western counterparts, he was always fascinated by the familiarity so common among senior and junior-level officers in their militaries. The admirals often knew the first names of the lieutenants. And used them. The deputy assistant secretaries and secretaries of defense had once been Annapolis or officer candidate school classmates with the commanders and captains. The egalitarian undercurrents ran much deeper in Western militaries than in his own, despite his country's ideological foundation in socialist and communist thought. He was anything but a “comrade” to senior officers or officials, and he knew it well. While at the war college in Newport, Lin Bao had studied the Battle of Kursk, the largest tank engagement of the Second World War, in which one of the great flaws of the Soviet army was that only command-variant tanks possessed two-way radios. The Soviets couldn't see any reason for subordinates to speak up to their commanders. The subordinate's job was solely to follow orders, to remain a cog in the machine. How little had changed in the intervening years.

The screen at the far end of the conference table flickered to life. “We've won a great battle,” explained Minister Chiang. “You deserve to see this.” The secure connection was perfect, its sound clear, and the image as unfiltered as if they were staring through a window into another room. That

room was the bridge wing of the carrier *Zheng He*. Standing center frame was Ma Qiang.

“Congratulations, Admiral,” said Minister Chiang, showing his small, carnivorous teeth. “I have an old friend of yours here with me.” He gestured to Lin Bao, who awkwardly leaned into the frame so that he might nod once respectfully.

Ma Qiang returned the gesture, but otherwise ignored Lin Bao. He launched into a situation update: His carrier battle group had sunk two American destroyers, which they'd identified as the *Carl Levin* and the *Chung-Hoon*. The former had suffered a massive explosion in its magazine, leaving few survivors among the crew of nearly three hundred, while the latter had taken all night to sink. In these first hours of the morning, Ma Qiang's ships had picked up a few American survivors. The final ship in the flotilla, the crippled *John Paul Jones*, was taking on water. Ma Qiang had already called for the captain to surrender, but she had flatly refused, replying with an expletive-laced transmission that, at first, Ma Qiang's translator hesitated to put into Mandarin. The *Zheng He* Carrier Battle Group had been on station for the last thirty-six hours, and Ma Qiang was growing increasingly concerned that the Americans, having heard nothing from their flotilla, might send a contingent of ships to investigate. He sought permission to strike the fatal blow against the *John Paul Jones*. “Comrade Minister,” Ma Qiang said, “I have no doubt as to our success against any American naval reinforcements, but their arrival would lead to the escalation I've been instructed to avoid. I have a flight of J-31 interceptors ready for launch against the *John Paul Jones*. Total mission time with recovery is fifty-two minutes. We're awaiting your order.”

Minister Chiang rubbed his round and very smooth chin. Lin Bao watched the screen. In the background, beyond the hurried comings and goings of the sailors on the bridge, he could see the horizon. A haze hung about the ocean. It took Lin Bao a moment to understand what had caused it—this haze was all that was left of the *Carl Levin* and the *Chung-Hoon*. And it would, he suspected, soon be all that was left of the *John Paul Jones*. Ma Qiang's concern was merited, Lin Bao thought. This operation from its inception had always been limited in scope. Its objective—the final,

uncontested control of the South China Sea—could only be undermined in one of two ways: first, if their forces failed to destroy this US flotilla; and second, if through a miscalculation this crisis escalated beyond a single, violent demonstration.

“Admiral,” Minister Chiang began, addressing Ma Qiang, “is it your belief that the *John Paul Jones* can be saved?”

Ma Qiang paused for a moment, spoke to someone off-screen in a hushed voice, and then returned his attention to the teleconference. “Comrade Minister, our best estimates are that the *John Paul Jones* will sink within three hours if unaided.” Lin Bao could see that the *Zheng He* was turning into the wind to be in the most advantageous position to launch its aircraft. Suddenly on the distant horizon a stitch of dark smoke appeared. At first it was so faint that Lin Bao mistook it for an imperfection in the teleconference's connection. Then he understood: It was the *John Paul Jones* burning a dozen miles off.

Minister Chiang began stroking his chin as he weighed whether to order this final blow. A decisive engagement was essential, but he needed to proceed with caution lest a miscalculation cause the incident to spiral into a broader conflict, one that could threaten his nation's interests further afield than the South China Sea. He leaned forward in his seat. “Admiral, you are cleared for launch. But listen closely; there is a specific message we must deliver.”

06:42 MARCH 13, 2034 (GMT+4:30)
BANDAR ABBAS

“This fucking place stinks.”

The dank air. The putrid scent. If Wedge hadn't known any better, he would've thought he'd been detained in the public restroom of a Greyhound bus terminal. Blindfolded, he sat cuffed to a steel chair bolted to the floor. He couldn't see anything except for the irregular permutations of shadow and ashy light that played around the room from what he suspected was a window near the ceiling.

A door creaked open, heavy on its hinges. From the sound, Wedge could tell it was metal. A set of uneven steps approached, like someone with a slight limp. Then a scrape on the floor as a chair was dragged over. Whoever sat across from him sat clumsily, as if the movement were awkward for them. Wedge waited for the person to say something, but there was only the smell of their cigarette. Wedge wouldn't be the one to speak first. He knew the Code of Conduct for POWs, an exclusive club into which he'd been inducted only hours before.

“Major Chris ‘Wedge’ Mitchell ...” came the voice across from him.

Then his blindfold was yanked off. Overwhelmed by the light, even though the room was poorly lit, Wedge struggled to see. He couldn't quite focus on the dark figure across from him, who continued, “Why are you here, Major Wedge?”

Slowly, his eyes adjusted. The man asking questions was dressed in a green uniform with gold embroidered epaulets of some significance. He had an athletic build like a runner and a hostile face with a long, hook-shaped scar that traced from above his eyebrow to below his cheek. His nose was compressed into a triangle, as if it had been broken and reset many times. In his hands he held the name patch that had been velcroed onto Wedge's flight suit.

“It's not Major Wedge. It's just Wedge. And only my friends call me that.”

The man in the green uniform frowned slightly, as if this hurt his feelings. “When we finish here, you will be wanting me as a friend.” He offered Wedge a cigarette, which he refused with a wave. The man in the uniform repeated his question. “Why are you here?”

Wedge blinked his eyes. He inventoried the bare room. A single window with bars in one corner, which cast a square of light on the damp concrete floor. His chair. A metal table. And another chair where this man now sat. Based on his epaulets, Wedge guessed he was a brigadier. In the far corner of the room was a pail, which Wedge assumed was his toilet. In the near corner was a mat, which he assumed was his bed. Above the mat a shackle with a chain was bolted into the wall. He realized they planned to restrain

him while he slept—if they let him sleep. The room was medieval, except for a single camera. It was hung high in the center of the ceiling, a red light blinking at its base. It was recording everything.

Wedge felt a sinking sensation in the pit of his stomach. He found himself thinking of his great-grandfather, the stories of gunsights marked in grease pencil on his canopy, and Pappy Boyington, the greatest of Marine aces. Pappy had wound up as a prisoner too, finishing the war in a Japanese POW camp. He also thought of his grandfather slinging snake and nape up north in I Corps while kids back home smoked dope and burned their draft cards. Lastly, and in some ways most bitterly, he thought of his own dad. Wedge feared the old man might hold himself responsible if his son wound up rotting in this prison. Wedge had always wanted to be like his dad, even if it killed him. For the first time he entertained the idea that it might.

The brigadier asked him once again why he was there.

Wedge did what he'd been trained to do, what the Code of Conduct demanded: He answered the brigadier's question by giving only his name, rank, and service number.

“That's not what I asked you,” said the brigadier. “I asked why you are here.”

Wedge repeated himself.

The brigadier nodded, as if he understood. He circled the room until he stood behind Wedge. The brigadier rested both his hands on Wedge's shoulders, allowing the three fingers of his mangled right hand to crawl crab-like toward the base of Wedge's neck. “The only way we can resolve this situation is to work together, Major Mitchell. Whether you like it or not, you've trespassed. We have the right to know why you are here so we can resolve this. Nobody wants things to escalate further.”

Wedge glanced toward the camera in the center of the ceiling. He repeated himself for a third time.

“Would it help if I turned that off?” the brigadier asked, looking up at the camera. “You could tell just me. Everything doesn't have to be recorded.”

Wedge knew from his survival training that the brigadier was trying to ingratiate himself and build trust, and then through that trust to elicit a confession. The goal of an interrogation wasn't information but rather control—emotional control. Once that control was taken—preferably by building rapport, but just as often through intimidation, or even violence—the information would flow. But something didn't add up with this brigadier: his rank (he was too senior to be a first-line interrogator), his scars (he had too many of them to have spent a career in intelligence), and his uniform (Wedge knew enough to recognize that he wasn't standard Iranian military). What Wedge felt was nothing more than his intuition, but he was a pilot, reared from a long line of pilots, all of whom had been taught to trust their well-cultivated intuition, both in and out of the cockpit. And it was his trust in this intuition that led him to go on the offense, to make a desperate attempt to gain control of the situation.

The brigadier asked Wedge one more time why he'd come.

This time Wedge didn't answer with his name, rank, and service number. Instead, he said, “I'll tell you, if you tell me.”

The brigadier appeared surprised, as if his reason for being there was obvious. “I'm not sure that I understand.”

“Why are you here?” asked Wedge. “If you tell me, then I'll tell you.”

The brigadier was no longer standing behind Wedge but had returned to his seat across from him. He leaned curiously toward his prisoner. “I'm here to question you,” the brigadier said tentatively, as if this fact embarrassed him in some way he didn't recognize until the very words had escaped his mouth.

“Bullshit,” said Wedge.

The brigadier came out of his seat.

“You're no interrogator,” continued Wedge. “With a face like that you want me to believe you're some intel weenie?”

And that entire face, aside from the scar tissue, began to turn shamefully red.

“You should be out in the field, with your troops,” said Wedge, and he was smiling now, with a reckless grin. He'd taken a gamble, and from the brigadier's reaction he knew he'd been right. He knew he had control. “So why are you in here? Who'd you piss off to get stuck with this shit duty?”

The brigadier was towering over him. He swung back and struck Wedge so hard that he knocked his chair out of the floor where it had been bolted. Wedge toppled over. He hit the ground lifeless as a mannequin. As he lay on his side with his wrists still bound to the chair, the blows fell on him in quick succession. The video camera with its solid red light, high up in the center of the ceiling, was the last thing Wedge saw before he blacked out.

Adapted from [2034: A Novel of the Next World War](#) by Elliot Ackerman and Admiral James Stavridis to be published March 09, 2021, by Penguin Press, an imprint of Penguin Publishing Group, a division of Penguin Random House LLC. Copyright © 2021 by Elliot Ackerman and James Stavridis.

If you buy something using links in our stories, we may earn a commission. This helps support our journalism. [Learn more.](#)

Illustrations by Sam Whitney; Getty Images

This excerpt appears in the February 2021 issue. [Subscribe now.](#)

Let us know what you think about this article. Submit a letter to the editor at mail@wired.com.

| [Section menu](#) | [Main menu](#) |